

FRENCH COURSE

COURSES AND GRAMMARS IN FRENCH AND GERMAN

ISSUED BY

The University Tutorial Press.

THE TUTORIAL FRENCH ACCIDENCE. By Prof. E. WEEKLEY, M.A., late Examiner in the University of London. With Exercises, Passages for Translation into French, and a Chapter on Elementary Syntax. *Third Edition.* 3s. 6d. The EXERCISES (separately), 1s. 6d.

THE TUTORIAL FRENCH SYNTAX. By Prof. E. WEEKLEY, M.A., and A. J. WYATT, M.A. With Exercises. *Second Edition.* 3s. 6d. The EXERCISES (separately), 1s.

SCHOOL FRENCH GRAMMAR. Being the Grammatical part of the *Matriculation French Course* without the exercises. By Prof. E. WEEKLEY, M.A. 2s. 6d.

THE MATRICULATION FRENCH COURSE. By Prof. E. WEEKLEY, M.A. *Third Edition.* 3s. 6d.

MATRICULATION FRENCH ESSAYS. By H. J. CHAYTOR, M.A., Headmaster, Plymouth College, and Dr. W. G. HARTOG, M.A., Examiner in the University of London. 1s. 6d.

SENIOR FRENCH COURSE. By Professor E. WEEKLEY, M.A., and C. GILLI, B.A. 3s. 6d.

Adapted from the *Matriculation French Course* for the Cambridge Senior Local Examination.

NEW JUNIOR FRENCH COURSE. By G. A. ROBERTS, M.A., Senior Modern Language Master, Royal Masonic School, Bushey. 2s. 6d.

DIRECT FRENCH COURSE. By H. J. CHAYTOR, M.A., Headmaster of Plymouth College. Illustrated. 1s. 6d.

SECOND YEAR DIRECT FRENCH COURSE. By G. A. ROBERTS, M.A., and H. J. CHAYTOR, M.A. 2s.

DIRECT GERMAN COURSE. By H. J. CHAYTOR, M.A. 2s. 6d.

JUNIOR FRENCH COURSE

BY

ERNEST WEEKLEY, M.A. CAMB. AND LOND.

PROFESSOR OF FRENCH AT UNIVERSITY COLLEGE, NOTTINGHAM
AUTHOR OF "THE MATRICULATION FRENCH COURSE," "FRENCH PROSE
COMPOSITION," ETC.

Tenth Impression (Second Edition)



LONDON: W. B. CLIVE

University Tutorial Press Ltd.

HIGH ST., NEW OXFORD ST., W.C.

1916

PREFACE.

THE *Junior French Course* is intended to be used as a companion volume to the *Junior French Reader*, already published in the same series. The standard is that of the Second Class College of Preceptors' Examination and of the Junior Locals. The matter has been arranged in the order which the author's experience has found to be best, the essential elements of the language preceding all irregularities. The exercises, which have been contributed by Mr. S. C. Latour, of Paris, are interspersed among the grammatical matter, but it has been thought best to put all paradigms of verbs together (pp. 100—159).

E. W.

In the second edition some continuous passages for translation into French have been added, together with notes thereon, and the English-French Vocabulary has been enlarged so as to serve for these continuous passages as well as for the exercises.

CONTENTS.

	PAGE
Introductory } ORTHOGRAPHY AND PRONUNCIATION.	1
Chapter } PARTS OF SPEECH	3
LESSON	
1—3 THE ARTICLE.	4
4 THE SUBSTANTIVE AND THE ADJECTIVE	9
5, 6 THE PERSONAL PRONOUNS.	11
7—11 THE USE OF THE TENSES	13
12 THE IMPERATIVE MOOD	20
13 THE NEGATIVE CONJUGATION	21
14 INTERROGATIVE CONJUGATION	23
15 NEGATIVE-INTERROGATIVE CONJUGATION.	24
16 PASSIVE VOICE	26
17 INTRANSITIVE VERBS	27
18 REFLEXIVE VERBS	28
19 IMPERSONAL VERBS	29
20 THE IMPERSONAL VERB <i>Y avoir</i>	31
21, 22 DEMONSTRATIVE ADJECTIVES AND PRONOUNS	32
23 POSSESSIVE ADJECTIVES AND PRONOUNS	35
24 RELATIVE PRONOUNS	37
25 INTERROGATIVE ADJECTIVES AND PRONOUNS	40
26 IDIOMATIC USES OF THE PERSONAL PRONOUNS.	42
27 DISJUNCTIVE PERSONAL PRONOUNS	44
28, 29 THE NUMERALS	47
30 COMPARISON	53
31 INDEFINITE ADJECTIVES	55
32 INDEFINITE ADJECTIVES AND PRONOUNS	56
33 INDEFINITE PRONOUNS.	58
31 38 THE SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD	60

LESSON		PAGE
39-41	THE INFINITIVE	65
42	THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE	69
43, 44	THE PAST PARTICIPLE	70
45	PLURAL OF SUBSTANTIVES AND ADJECTIVES	72
46-49	FEMININE OF SUBSTANTIVES AND ADJECTIVES	75
50	COMPOUND SUBSTANTIVES	83
51	ADVERBS OF MANNER. FORMATION	86
52, 53	QUASI-IRREGULAR VERBS OF THE FIRST CONJUGATION	89
54-70	IRREGULAR VERBS	90

PARADIGMS.

1	CONJUGATION OF <i>Avoir</i>	100
2	CONJUGATION OF <i>Être</i>	102
3-6	THE FOUR REGULAR CONJUGATIONS	104
13	NEGATIVE CONJUGATION	112
14	INTERROGATIVE CONJUGATION	114
15	NEGATIVE INTERROGATIVE CONJUGATION	115
16	CONJUGATION OF THE PASSIVE VOICE	116
17	CONJUGATION OF AN INTRANSITIVE VERB	119
18	CONJUGATION OF A REFLEXIVE VERB	120
19	CONJUGATION OF AN IMPERSONAL VERB	124
52, 53	QUASI-IRREGULAR VERBS (FIRST CONJUGATION)	126
54-70	IRREGULAR VERBS	132
	CONJUGATION OF THE REFLEXIVE <i>s'en Aller</i>	158

APPENDIX.

A.	RULES FOR GENDER	160
B.	SPECIMEN OF PARSING	162

EXERCISES AND VOCABULARIES.

PASSAGES FOR TRANSLATION INTO FRENCH	163
NOTES ON THE PASSAGES FOR TRANSLATION INTO FRENCH	173
FRENCH-ENGLISH VOCABULARY	179
ENGLISH-FRENCH VOCABULARY	198

GRAMMATICAL REFORMS

AUTHORISED BY THE

FRENCH MINISTER OF EDUCATION, 1901.

By a decree of the French Minister of Education (February 26th, 1901), a good many modifications have been introduced into the grammatical rules hitherto observed. In each case the suggested simplification is to be regarded as a "tolérance," the original usage remaining equally correct. The following is an abstract of the changes so far as they deal with rules contained in this book.

COMPOUND SUBSTANTIVES.

Compound substantives may always be written without hyphens: e.g. *un chou fleur* (§ 222),

THE ARTICLE.

The partitive article may be used instead of *de* before a substantive preceded by an adjective: e.g. *des bons fruits* (§ 21).

NUMERALS.

Vingt and **cent**, when multiplied, may take the sign of the plural though followed by another number. No hyphen need be used in compound numerals: e.g. *trois cents quatre vingts dix sept hommes* (§§ 146, 150).

Mille may be used for *mil* in dates (§ 149).

INDEFINITE ADJECTIVES AND PRONOUNS.

Même, when added to a disjunctive personal pronoun, requires no hyphen (§ 144).

THE VERB.

Compound verbs may be written without hyphen or apostrophe: e.g. *entrecroiser*, *entrouvrir* (§§ 7, 8).

The hyphen may be omitted in the interrogative conjugation (§ 7).

C'est may be used instead of *ce sont* when the complement is third person plural (§ 102, Note).

FURTHER REFORMS

ACCEPTED BY THE FRENCH ACADEMY, 1905.

The following is an abstract of such of these reforms as are likely to affect students who are comparatively speaking beginners in French.

The seven substantives in *-ou* which hitherto formed their plural by adding *-x* (§ 196) may now form their plural regularly by the addition of *-s*: e.g. *hibous*, *chous*.

In some words the accents may be modified or suppressed; such are: *déjà* (*déjà*), *assidument* (*assidument*, § 227), *dévouement* (*dévoûment* or *dévouement*), *île* (*île*), *maître* (*maître*), *naître* (*naître*), *traître* (*traître*), *voute* (*voûte*).

Dixième and *sixième* may now be written *dizième*, *sizième*

THE PRECEPTORS' FRENCH COURSE.

INTRODUCTORY CHAPTER.—ORTHOGRAPHY AND PRONUNCIATION.

THE ALPHABET.

§ 1. The French alphabet is the same as that used in writing English, except that in French the letters **k** and **w** occur only in foreign words.

§ 2. Capitals and small letters are used as in English, except that the following classes of words do not in French begin with a capital letter :—

- (a) adjectives formed from names of countries and other proper names ; *e.g. la langue française, the French language ;*
- (b) names of titles ; *e.g. le duc de Buckingham arrivera demain, the Duke of Buckingham will arrive to-morrow ;*
- (c) names of days and months ; *e.g. il sera ici le premier lundi de juin, he will be here on the first Monday in June.*

ORTHOGRAPHIC SIGNS.

§ 3. The same marks of punctuation are used in French as in English.

§ 4. There are three accents : the acute (´), the grave (`), and the circumflex (^). The use of these is explained in § 9.

§ 5. The cedilla (¸) written under **c** (thus : ç) indicates that the letter has its soft sound.

§ 6. The diaeresis (¨) indicates that the vowel over which it is placed does not coalesce with the preceding vowel, but is pronounced separately; *e.g.* Noël, *Christmas*.

§ 7. The hyphen (-) is used, as in English, to join the members of a compound word; also in some compound numerals (§ 150), and to join the pronoun to the verb in commands (§ 35) and questions (§ 65).

§ 8. The apostrophe (') marks the elision of a vowel before a following vowel or silent *h*; *e.g.* l'oncle (for le oncle), *the uncle*; l'homme (for le homme), *the man*.

NOTE.—The following details on elision are important:—

o and **u** are never elided.

i is elided only in **si** before **il** or **ils**.

a is elided in **la**, *the, her*; *e.g.* l'âme (f.), *the soul*; nous l'aimons, *we like her*.

e is elided in le , <i>the</i> ,	l'homme, <i>the man</i> .
le , <i>him, it</i> ,	nous l'avons vu, <i>we have seen him</i> .
ce (pron.),	c'est moi, <i>it is I</i> .
je , <i>I</i> ,	j'aime, <i>I love</i> .
me , <i>me, to me</i> ,	vous m'ennuyez, <i>you annoy me</i> .
te , <i>thee, to thee</i> ,	je t'aime, <i>I love you</i> .
se , <i>himself, etc.</i> ,	il s'est blessé, <i>he has hurt himself</i> .
de , <i>of</i> ,	la croix d'honneur, <i>the cross of honour</i> .

que, *which, what*, qu'avez-vous? *what ails you?*

que (conj.), *that*, je crois qu'il viendra, *I believe that he will come*.

ne, *not*, je n'ose, *I dare not*.

jusque, *until*, jusqu'à midi, *till noon*.

In **entre**, in the substantive **entr'acte**, *interlude*, and in several compound verbs; *e.g.* **entr'ouvrir**, *to half open*.

In **presque**, in the substantive **presqu'île**, *peninsula*.

In **quelque**, only in the compound **quelqu'un**, *some one*.

In **lorsque**, *when*, **puisque**, *since*, **quoique**, *although*, **e** is elided only before **il**, **ils**, **elle**, **elles**, **un**, **une**, **on**.

Obs. No elision takes place before the words **onze**, *eleven*, **onzième**, *eleventh*, **ouate**, *wadding*, **oui**, *yes*; *e.g.* **le onzième**, *the eleventh*.

ON THE USE OF THE ACCENTS.

§ 9. The acute accent (´) is used only over *e*, to which it gives the sound known as “closed *e*.”

The grave accent (`) placed over *e* denotes that the *e* has its “open” sound.

The grave accent (`) is also placed over *a* and *u*, and serves to distinguish words which are spelt alike; it does not then affect the pronunciation.

la, the, her

là, there.

ou, either, or

où, where.

The circumflex accent (^) may stand on any vowel (except *y*), and usually indicates that the vowel is long; in most cases the circumflex also denotes the suppression of some letter or letters, generally *s*.

PARTS OF SPEECH.

§ 10. There are nine parts of speech in French:—

- | | | |
|-----------------|---|-------------|
| 1. Article | } | variable. |
| 2. Substantive | | |
| 3. Adjective | | |
| 4. Pronoun | | |
| 5. Verb | } | invariable. |
| 6. Adverb | | |
| 7. Preposition | | |
| 8. Conjunction | | |
| 9. Interjection | | |

When we say that a word is “variable,” we mean that to the word, or to a certain unchangeable portion of it, suffixes may be added.

The purpose which a suffix serves differs according to the part of speech to which the word belongs:—

Substantives have a suffix to mark the plural number, as in English.

Articles, adjectives, and pronouns vary according to their gender and number.

Verbs have suffixes indicating person, number, tense, and mood.

NOTE.—Some pronouns have special forms for different cases—nominative, accusative, and dative (§ 30), much as in English.

Obs. From what is here said it is evident that suffixes are much more varied in French than in English, and that they play an important part in the grammar of the language.

LESSON 1.—THE ARTICLE.

§ 11. There are in French three articles:—

- the definite article (Eng. *the*);
- the indefinite article (Eng. *a, an*);
- the partitive article (Eng. *some, any*).

§ 12. The article must agree with the substantive in gender and number.

§ 13. THE DEFINITE ARTICLE.

	Singular.	Plural.
Masculine.	le } l' before a vowel	les
Feminine.	la } or h mute	
	le roi, <i>the king.</i>	les rois, <i>the kings.</i>
	la reine, <i>the queen.</i>	les reines, <i>the queens.</i>
	l'ami, <i>the friend.</i>	les amis, <i>the friends.</i>
	l'homme, <i>the man.</i>	les hommes, <i>the men.</i>
	l'hôtesse, <i>the hostess.</i>	les hôtesse, <i>the hostesses.</i>

NOTE 1.—Substantives in French are either masculine or feminine, the neuter gender having disappeared.

NOTE 2.—Initial *h* is usually mute in French. When it is aspirated; no elision takes place; *e.g.* le Hongrois, la Hongroise, *the Hungarian*. The French *h*- aspirate is, however, not sounded as in English.

§ 14. When the definite article is preceded by the prepositions *de, of, from, or à, to, at, de le* is contracted to *du*,

à le to au, de les to des, and à les to aux. Du and au are replaced by de l' and à l' before a vowel or h- mute.

du roi, <i>of the king.</i>	de l'empereur, <i>of the emperor.</i>
de la reine, <i>of the queen.</i>	de l'impératrice, <i>of the empress.</i>
au roi, <i>to the king.</i>	à l'empereur, <i>to the emperor.</i>
à la reine, <i>to the queen.</i>	à l'impératrice, <i>to the empress.</i>
des rois, <i>of the kings.</i>	des empereurs, <i>of the emperors.</i>
aux reines, <i>to the queens.</i>	aux impératrices, <i>to the empresses.</i>

NOTE.—There is no possessive case in French, possession being expressed by the use of the preposition *de*, thus :—*la couronne du roi*, *the king's crown* ; *les couronnes des rois*, *the kings' crowns*.

THE INDEFINITE ARTICLE.

§ 15. The indefinite article is, as in English, used only in the singular.

Masculine.	un
Feminine.	une

un roi, <i>a king.</i>	une reine, <i>a queen.</i>
------------------------	----------------------------

THE PARTITIVE ARTICLE.

§ 16. The genitive case of the definite article—*i.e.* the definite article preceded by the preposition *de*—must be used in French for the English *some* or *any*, whether expressed or understood.

Il mange du pain.	Il boit de l'eau.
<i>He is eating (some) bread.</i>	<i>He is drinking (some) water.</i>
Il boit de la bière.	Avez-vous des livres ?
<i>He is drinking (some) beer.</i>	<i>Have you (any) books ?</i>

NOTE.—The plural of the partitive article may thus be regarded as the plural of the indefinite article ; *e.g.* *un homme*, *a man* ; *des hommes*, *(some) men*.

§ 17. The article, definite, indefinite, or partitive, must be repeated before every substantive in French.

Le père et la mère ont du pain et de la viande.
<i>The father and mother have bread and meat.</i>
Le soldat a un fusil et une baïonnette.
<i>The soldier has a rifle and bayonet.</i>

Learn the verb avoir (§ 235).

EXERCISE 1.

A.—1. J'ai la plume, le crayon et l'encre. 2. Louis a les livres et les cahiers. 3. Nous avons les grammaires et les dictionnaires. 4. La reine aura la visite de la princesse. 5. Nous avons une lettre du roi. 6. Vous avez des pommes et des poires, de la bière et du vin. 7. Ils ont la montre de l'enfant. 8. Tu auras un livre et une montre. 9. Vous auriez parlé (*spoken*) au père du soldat. 10. Nous aurons les canifs des élèves.

B.—1. Edward's friend has an apple. 2. A lady has given (*donné*) fruit (*plur.*) to the child. 3. We have given exercises to the boys and girls. 4. They would have written (*écrit*) a letter to the queen. 5. The soldier will have arms and ammunition (*plur.*). 6. The child's mother has the father's house. 7. He has replied (*répondu*) to the general's envoy. 8. The prince will have the crown of Austria and of Hungary. 9. A soldier has the king's sword. 10. Officers and soldiers have the keeping of the gate of the palace.

LESSON 2.—THE ARTICLE (*continued*).

THE DEFINITE ARTICLE.

§ 18. The definite article must be used, in French, though not in English, in the following cases :—

1. Before any substantive used in a general sense.

Le vin réjouit le cœur de l'homme.

Wine rejoices the heart of man.

Les hommes sont mortels.

Men are mortal.

2. Before names of continents, countries, provinces, and mountains.

Le Sinaï est situé entre l'Asie et l'Afrique.

Sinai is situated between Asia and Africa.

NOTE.—The definite article is omitted after the preposition **en**, *in* ; e.g. **il demeure en France**, *he lives in France*.

3. Before titles.

Le président Faure a écrit à la reine Victoria.

President Faure has written to Queen Victoria

4. Before proper names preceded by an adjective.

Le pauvre Henri est mort.

Poor Henry is dead.

5. Instead of the English indefinite article to indicate price.

Trois francs la bouteille.

Three francs a bottle.

NOTE.—In speaking of payment by time, the preposition **par**, *by*, is used; e.g. **cent francs par mois**, *a hundred francs a month*.

6. Often instead of the possessive adjective in speaking of parts of the body, articles of dress, etc.

Il entra, le chapeau à la main.

He came in with his hat in his hand.

Learn the verb être (§ 236).

EXERCISE 2.

A.—1. L'or est jaune, le plomb est lourd, le fer est utile.
2. Les soldats auront des fusils et des cartouches. 3. Vous serez en France à la fin du mois. 4. Les Alpes sont entre la France, la Suisse et l'Italie. 5. La paresse est la mère des vices. 6. La source du Rhin est en Suisse. 7. Le prix du drap de la robe est deux francs le mètre. 8. L'ouvrier serait content, s'il avait quatre francs par jour. 9. Vous serez heureux de faire (*in doing*) le bien. 10. La Hollande est monotone, l'Écosse est pittoresque.

B.—1. Green is the emblem of hope. 2. Tall Charles is the friend of little John. 3. Pepper and mustard are condiments. 4. The poor man will have his arm cut off (*coupé*). 5. The lady at the theatre would have her hat on her head. 6. The traveller Livingstone has explored (*exploré*) Africa. 7. Doctor Nansen is very popular in Europe. 8. The Duke of York is the son of the Prince of Wales. 9. King George of Greece is the son of King Christian. 10. He had his hat on one side (*on his ear*) and his whip in (*à*) his hand.

LESSON 3.—THE ARTICLE (*continued*).

THE INDEFINITE ARTICLE.

§ 19. The indefinite article is omitted before a substantive in apposition.

Le martinet, espèce d'hirondelle, est très timide.

The martin, a kind of swallow, is very timid.

§ 20. The indefinite article is omitted after the verb **être**, *to be*, in stating a person's occupation, nationality, etc.

Il est médecin.

He is a doctor.

Nous sommes Espagnols.

We are Spaniards.

THE PARTITIVE ARTICLE.

§ 21. The partitive article (§ 16) must be replaced by *de* only :—

1. Before an adjective.

Nous aurons de bons fruits.
We shall have good fruit.

2. After a negative.

Nous n'aurons pas de pain.
We shall have no bread.

3. After any word denoting measure or quantity.

Nous aurons beaucoup d'argent.
We shall have much money.
Voici un panier de poires.
Here is a basket of pears.

NOTE.—The following is a list of adverbs of quantity which always require *de* before the following substantive :—

assez, <i>enough.</i>	peu, <i>little, few.</i>
autant, <i>as much, as many.</i>	plus, <i>more.</i>
beaucoup, <i>much, many.</i>	tant, <i>so much, so many.</i>
combien, <i>how much, how many.</i>	trop, <i>too much, too many.</i>
moins, <i>less, fewer.</i>	un peu, <i>a little, a few.</i>

Learn the verb porter (§ 237).

EXERCISE 3.

A.—1. Je donnerai peu de travail aux élèves. 2. Le Maréchal de MacMahon, duc de Magenta, était d'origine irlandaise. 3. Votre ami est Bulgare ou Monténégrin. 4. Combien de soldats sont ici ? 5. Nous aurons d'excellents fruits et du lait frais. 6. Vous aurez de bonnes raisons à donner. 7. Nous n'aurons pas de fruits cette année. 8. Ils n'ont pas de vin, mais ils ont du thé. 9. Nous aurons beaucoup de travail aujourd'hui. 10. J'ai assez de viande et tu as trop de pain.

B.—1. The workman will have a glass of wine and a cup of coffee. 2. I will give (to) the traveller a dozen oysters and a litre of wine. 3. You give too much wine to the child. 4. He is a Hungarian but his mother was a Pole. 5. You will bring more apples and grapes (*sing.*). 6. You would have less work and more exercise. 7. I should like a little sugar with the fruit (*plur.*). 8. London, the capital of England, is a port. 9. We have so much pleasure in travelling (*à voyager*). 10. We should bring a pound of bread and a dozen eggs.

LESSON 4.—THE SUBSTANTIVE AND THE ADJECTIVE.

§ 22. The adjective agrees in gender and number with the substantive which it qualifies.

§ 23. The feminine of adjectives, and of such substantives as have a corresponding feminine, is formed by adding -e to the masculine.

un ami dévoué une amie dévouée *a devoted friend.*

§ 24. The plural of substantives and adjectives is formed by adding -s to the singular.

l'ami dévoué, *the devoted friend.*
les amis dévoués, *the devoted friends.*

§ 25. When an adjective qualifies substantives of different gender it is put in the masculine plural.

Les cahiers et les plumes sont neufs.
The exercise-books and pens are new.

§ 26. The position of the adjective is variable in French. In prose it is more commonly placed after the substantive.

Il a fait un discours très éloquent.
He has made a very eloquent speech.

§ 27. The following adjectives usually precede the substantive, when used in their literal sense:—

beau, <i>beautiful, fine.</i>	mauvais, <i>bad.</i>
bon, <i>good.</i>	méchant, <i>wicked.</i>
cher, <i>dear.</i>	meilleur, <i>better.</i>
digne, <i>worthy.</i>	moindre, <i>less.</i>
grand, <i>great, tall.</i>	petit, <i>small.</i>
gros, <i>big.</i>	saint, <i>holy.</i>
haut, <i>high.</i>	sot, <i>foolish.</i>
jeune, <i>young.</i>	vaste, <i>vast.</i>
joli, <i>pretty.</i>	vieux, <i>old.</i>
long, <i>long.</i>	vilain, <i>ugly.</i>

§ 28. The following classes of adjectives usually follow the substantive:—

1. Adjectives denoting physical qualities (colour, form, etc.).

Une étoffe noire.

A black material.

Une table ronde.

A round table.

2. Adjectives formed from proper names.

L'armée française.

The French army.

Une cruauté satanique.

Diabolical cruelty.

NOTE.—Such adjectives are not, in French, written with a capital letter, unless used as substantives; e.g. *les Suisses et les Allemands*, *the Swiss and the Germans*.

3. Polysyllabic adjectives.

Des lois imaginaires.

Imaginary laws.

4. Adjectives denoting dignity office, religion, etc.

L'armée royale.

The royal army.

L'église catholique.

The Catholic Church.

5. Two or more adjectives qualifying one substantive.

Un homme bon et vertueux.

A good and virtuous man.

Learn the verb finir (§ 238).

EXERCISE 4.

A.—1. Le roi bâtera un beau palais dans le parc. 2. L'élève indocile rougira de (*for*) sa mauvaise conduite. 3. Vous donnerez une jolie robe bleue à la petite fille appliquée. 4. Le cousin de Jean est grand, la cousine de Henri est petite. 5. Le père et la mère de Joseph sont étrangers. 6. Le marteau du forgeron est lourd. 7. La tâche du vieux maçon serait trop difficile. 8. Le maître punit le mauvais élève. 9. La jeune vigne fournira de gros raisins noirs. 10. Nous finissons ce long exercice.

B.—1. You will fill the large square case. 2. The holy man will give salutary counsels. 3. The least reprimand will punish the attentive pupil. 4. John and Mary are intelligent and well-informed. 5. She will choose a black hat and a blue dress. 6. John's best neighbour is old Peter. 7. We shall have an English coachman, a German gardener and a French maid. 8. The Germans profess the Protestant religion. 9. The castle of Versailles is a worthy royal residence. 10. The women in Normandy wear high (and) pointed caps.

LESSON 5.—THE PERSONAL PRONOUNS.

§ 29. Personal pronouns are divided into conjunctive and disjunctive. The former are used in conjunction with verbs. The disjunctive personal pronouns are dealt with in Lesson 27.

§ 30. The conjunctive personal pronouns have three cases : viz. nominative, dative, and accusative.

	First Person. Both Genders.	Second Person. Both Genders.	Third Person. Masc.	Fem.
Sing. {	Nom. <i>je, I.</i>	<i>tu, thou.</i>	<i>il, he, it.</i>	<i>elle, she, it.</i>
	Dat. <i>me, (to) me.</i>	<i>te, (to) thee.</i>	<i>lui, (to) him.</i>	<i>lui, (to) her.</i>
	Acc. <i>me, me.</i>	<i>te, thee.</i>	<i>le, him, it.</i>	<i>la, her, it.</i>
Plur. {	Nom. <i>nous, we.</i>	<i>vous, ye, you.</i>	<i>ils, they.</i>	<i>elles, they.</i>
	Dat. <i>nous, (to) us.</i>	<i>vous, (to) you.</i>	<i>leur, (to) them.</i>	<i>leur, (to) them.</i>
	Acc. <i>nous, us.</i>	<i>vous, you.</i>	<i>les, them.</i>	<i>les, them.</i>

For the genitive *en* and the dative *y*, see §§ 130–2.

NOTE.—The singular forms of the second person are only used poetically (as in English), or in addressing near relatives, intimate friends, and children. In other cases the plural form *vous* is used for the singular.

Vous êtes très bon.
You are very kind.

§ 31. Pronouns governed by a verb precede that verb in French. In compound tenses they precede the auxiliary.

Nous l'aimons.	Ils nous aiment.
<i>We love him (or her).</i>	<i>They love us.</i>
Nous t'aurions aimé.	Elles m'ont aimé.
<i>We would have loved thee.</i>	<i>They have loved me.</i>

Learn the verb recevoir (§ 239).

EXERCISE 5.

A.—1. Vous finirez l'exercice et vous le copierez. 2. Il vous aime et vous le haïssez. 3. Je vous aiderai dans toute circonstance difficile. 4. Ils nous donneront de bons conseils. 5. Le courrier lui portera les ordres du général. 6. Je recevrai Caroline et lui donnerai les gravures. 7. Jacques m'a désobéi, je le punirai et lui donnerai un pœsum. 8. Elle m'apercevra dans l'avenue. 9. Je la gronderai, si elle vous reçoit. 10. Vous lui donnerez des fruits mûrs ; elle les recevra avec plaisir.

B.—1. The workman will perceive the damage (*plur.*) and will repair it. 2. You will be astonished if you meet her. 3. You (*sing.*) shall give me the book and I will lend you the pen. 4. Jane and Charlotte are very good; I will reward them. 5. You will give them a French doll. 6. We should receive them with pleasure. 7. They owe (to) them gratitude. 8. They receive with pleasure the advice (*plur.*) which (*que*) you give them. 9. The unfaithful friend would deceive thee; thou shalt avoid him. 10. We receive them too often; they will deceive us.

LESSON 6.—THE PERSONAL PRONOUNS

(continued).

§ 32. When two pronouns, not both of the third person, are governed by the same verb, the indirect object precedes the direct object.

Je vous le donne.
I give it to you.

Il nous l'a donné.
He has given it to us.

§ 33. When the pronouns are both of the third person, the accusatives *le, la, les*, precede the datives *lui, leur*.

Je le leur ai donné. **Nous les lui donnerons.**
I have given it to them. *We shall give them to him (or her).*

§ 34. The following are the only permissible combinations (omitting, for the present, *en* and *y*, Lesson 26) :—

Dat. Acc. me, te nous, vous	}	le or la or les.	Acc. Dat. le, la les	}	lui or leur.
--	---	------------------	---	---	--------------

§ 35. In the imperative, used affirmatively, the accusative comes before the dative, and the pronouns must be connected with the verb and with each other by hyphens.

Donnez-les-nous.
Give them to us.

Donnons-le-lui.
Let us give it to him.

Note.—Instead of *me* and *te*, *moi* and *toi* are used, but suffer elision before *en* or *y*.

Ecoutez-moi.
Listen to me.

Lave-toi.
Wash yourself.

Donnez-m'en.
Give me some.

Learn the verb rompre (§ 240).

EXERCISE 6.

A.—1. Je le rendrai si vous me le confiez. 2. Il vous le prêtera un autre jour. 3. Si je vous prête une canne, vous la rompez peut-être. 4. Nous vous prêterons des livres; vous nous les rendrez demain. 5. La grammaire est en haut (*upstairs*), Jacques vous la descendra. 6. Vous me la donnerez après la classe. 7. Finissez votre devoir; vous me le donnerez ensuite. 8. Jacques est absent, attendez-le. 9. Vous avez les livres de Pierre; rendez-les-lui. 10. Si tu as le dictionnaire de Marie, rends-le-lui.

B.—1. The books are useless; sell them. 2. We will give them to them and they will return them to you. 3. Give it to us; we will keep it. 4. Lend her the ball; she will return it to you. 5. They will lose the books if you give them to them. 6. If the dictionaries are upstairs you will fetch them down. 7. The dog will bite you if you tease him. 8. They will be satisfied if you lend them to them. 9. John and Mary will lend me a ball; I shall return it to them. 10. We shall sell (to) them the house and the garden.

LESSON 7.—THE USE OF THE TENSES.

PRESENT.

§ 36. The present tense has only one form in French: thus *j'aime* is used to express *I love*, *I am loving*, and *I do love*.

Il finit son thème.

He is finishing his exercise.

§ 37. The present is also used, as in English, to express the immediate future.

Le concert commence à huit heures.

The concert begins (or will begin) at eight.

§ 38. The present is frequently employed, in vivid narrative, for the past definite (§ 44).

Du Guesclin les attaque, les met en fuite, renverse Felletton et le fait prisonnier.

Du Guesclin attacked them, put them to flight, overthrew Felton and made him prisoner.

§ 39. The present is used for the English past indefinite in speaking of an action or state still in progress.

Je vous attends depuis six heures.

I have been waiting for you since six.

PAST INDEFINITE.

§ 40. The past indefinite tense corresponds to two English forms; e.g. *j'ai aimé* means *I have loved* or *I have been loving*.

J'ai patiné aujourd'hui.

I have been skating to-day.

§ 41. The past indefinite is also commonly used, in conversation, for the past definite (§ 44).

Je l'ai rencontré ce matin.

I met him this morning.

Nous l'avons toujours aimé.

We always liked him.

EXERCISE 7.

A.—1. Elle chante pendant que vous travaillez. 2. Nous recevons le journal tous les jours. 3. Ils parlent français; nous les entendons distinctement. 4. Il arrive, comprend l'imminence du danger, vole au secours de la petite troupe. 5. Je demeure en Angleterre depuis trois ans. 6. Depuis dix minutes vous nous répétez la même phrase. 7. L'hiver a commencé. 8. Nous avons entendu de bons chanteurs au concert. 9. J'ai fait (*been for*) un voyage en Écosse; je vous le raconterai. 10. Jacques l'a aperçu la semaine dernière.

B.—1. They have already spread the fatal news. 2. She received you in the little drawing-room of the hotel. 3. Geography teaches us that the earth is round. 4. Pheasants eat ants' eggs. 5. England despatches cotton goods (*les tissus de coton*) into the whole world. 6. The swallows announce the changes of weather. 7. At the beginning of winter the trees have lost their (*the*) leaves. 8. I received yesterday letters from France. 9. I have been here since Monday. 10. He took aim, loosed the arrow, and the apple fell.

LESSON 8.—THE USE OF THE TENSES (*continued*).

IMPERFECT AND PAST DEFINITE.

§ 42. The imperfect tense corresponds to three English forms; e.g. *je vendais* means *I sold*, *I was selling*, or *I used to sell*.

Quand je demeurais en France je déjeunais à midi.

When I lived in France I used to breakfast at noon.

Il déjeunait quand nous avons passé chez lui.

He was breakfasting when we called on him.

§ 43. The imperfect is used for the English pluperfect in the same way as the present for the English past indefinite (§ 39).

Depuis trois ans il était le conseiller du prince.

For three years he had been the prince's adviser.

§ 44. The past definite tense corresponds to one English form; e.g. *je vendis* means *I sold*. It is only used of actions and states fully completed and having definite limits of time.

Guillaume le Conquérant épousa Mathilde de Flandre.

William the Conqueror married Matilda of Flanders.

Les conjurés tuèrent César.

The conspirators killed Cæsar.

Il resta sourd pendant six mois.

He remained deaf for six months.

NOTE 1.—The past definite is the tense of written narrative. In conversation it is usually replaced by the past indefinite (§ 41).

NOTE 2.—In vivid narratives the past definite is often replaced by the present (§ 38).

§ 45. The distinction between the imperfect and past definite must be carefully observed in writing French. The following extract should be translated into English, and then re-translated.

DEATH OF SIR PHILIP SIDNEY.

Sir Philippe Sidney, homme distingué qui **commandait** la cavalerie sous son oncle Leicester, dans l'expédition de Hollande, **déploya** le courage le plus intrépide à la bataille de Zutphen (1586). Il **eut** deux chevaux tués sous lui. Lorsqu'il en **montait** un troisième, il **fut** blessé mortellement. Comme on l'**emportait** hors du champ de bataille, dans une grande agonie et souffrant vivement de la soif que lui **causait** une grande perte de sang, il **demanda** de l'eau. On lui en **apporta**; mais, comme il la **portait** à ses lèvres, il **vit** un soldat blessé qui, en passant près de lui, lui **jeta** un regard d'envie. Sir Philippe **éloigna** aussitôt de ses lèvres le breuvage qu'il n'avait pas encore goûté et le lui **présenta**, en disant: "Tu en as plus besoin que moi."

EXERCISE 8.

A.—1. Ils finissaient la leçon pendant que vous jouiez. 2. Je reçus à 8 heures une lettre de Georges ; je lui répondis immédiatement. 3. Parmentier importa en France la culture de la pomme de terre. 4. Le médecin anglais Jenner découvrit la vaccine. 5. La flotte alliée bombardait les insurgés. 6. Le blocus commença deux jours après la proclamation. 7. Les colons abattirent les arbres et défrichèrent le sol. 8. Quand j'entrai dans la classe, les élèves jouaient. 9. À la mort du président Carnot toute la France fut en deuil. 10. Les Romains consultaient les oracles avant le combat.

B.—1. Stephenson invented the locomotive. 2. Christopher Columbus discovered America. 3. The Gauls used to fight naked. 4. The ancient philosophers taught the immortality of the soul. 5. Napoleon crushed Europe and gave kingdoms to his brothers. 6. Thierry, the son of Clovis, entered (into) Auvergne, devastated and ruined the country. 7. The fox and the goat descended into a well. 8. Beer and mead composed the drink of the Germanic races. 9. At Sparta, when an old man was present, the young people kept silence. 10. Champlain founded the colony of Canada ; Lewis XV. ceded it to England.

LESSON 9.—THE USE OF THE TENSES (*continued*).

PLUPERFECT AND PAST ANTERIOR.

§ 46. The pluperfect tense corresponds to two English forms ; e.g. *j'avais chanté* means *I had sung* or *I had been singing*.

Un marchand turc avait perdu sa bourse.

A Turkish merchant had lost his purse.

Nous avions patiné toute la journée.

We had been skating all day.

§ 47. The past anterior tense corresponds to one English form ; e.g. *il eut reçu* means *he had received*.

Aussitôt que nous eûmes reçu sa lettre, nous partîmes.

As soon as we had received his letter, we started.

§ 48. The use of the past anterior is practically restricted to sentences beginning with the phrases—

à peine, hardly,

après que, after,

lorsque, when,

aussitôt que, } as soon as,

dès que, }

ne . . . pas plus tôt, no sooner

and the sentence almost always contains another verb in the past definite.

Aussitôt que j'eus déjeuné, je sortis.

As soon as I had breakfasted, I went out.

NOTE.—After the above conjunctions the pluperfect must be used in speaking of repeated or habitual actions.

Aussitôt que j'avais déjeuné, je sortais.

As soon as I had breakfasted, I used to go out.

EXERCISE 9.

A.—1. Quand nous eûmes soupé, nous allâmes au lit. 2. J'allais chaque jour sur la rivière quand j'avais fini la leçon. 3. Après qu'il eut travaillé, il sortit dans le jardin. 4. Les enfants enfermaient dans des cages les oiseaux qu'ils avaient pris (*caught*). 5. Aussitôt que nous eûmes entendu la chanson nous quittâmes le concert. 6. Quand le voleur eut échappé, les gardiens fermèrent la porte. 7. Les Français avaient fondé des colonies en Amérique. 8. Quand vous eûtes fini, ils partirent. 9. Nous avions étudié et compris (*understood*) la leçon avant dix heures. 10. Ils avaient demeuré plusieurs années en Égypte.

B.—1. The children had lied; they were absent from school. 2. Scarcely had she spoken, when (*que*) the applause (*plur.*) broke out. 3. He replied as soon as he had received the letter. 4. When he had dined, he went down to the drawing-room. 5. As soon as the attack had begun, he lost courage. 6. As soon as the corn was ripe, the reapers cut it. 7. When you had corrected the exercises, you sent them back to him. 8. They had begun to (*à*) speak French with the professor. 9. Thou hadst heard the words of the master. 10. I had already received bad news.

LESSON 10.—THE USE OF THE TENSES (*continued*).

FUTURE AND FUTURE PERFECT.

§ 49. The future tense corresponds to two English forms; *e.g.* je vendrai means *I shall sell* or *I shall be selling*.

Je vendrai mon cheval avant l'hiver.

I shall sell my horse before the winter.

Nous resterons deux mois à Paris.

We shall be staying two months in Paris.

§ 50. The future is used for the English present after the conjunctions *quand*, *lorsque*, *when*, *dès que*, *aussitôt que*, *as soon as*, when future time is clearly referred to.

Appelez-moi dès qu'il sera ici.

Call me as soon as he is here.

§ 51. The future perfect tense corresponds to two English forms; e.g. *j'aurai travaillé* means *I shall have worked* or *I shall have been working*.

J'aurai fini à onze heures.

I shall have finished at eleven.

À onze heures j'aurai travaillé pendant six heures.

At eleven I shall have been working for six hours.

§ 52. The future perfect must be used for the English past indefinite in the same way as the future for the English present (§ 50).

Appelez-moi quand vous aurez fini.

Call me when you have finished.

§ 53. The future perfect tense may also be used to express probability.

Elle l'aura informé de votre retour.

She must have informed him of your return.

EXERCISE 10.

A.—1. Dieu punira les méchants et récompensera les justes. 2. Le roi recevra l'ambassadeur étranger. 3. Le pilote dirigera le vaisseau. 4. Les soldats combattront pour la patrie. 5. Vous recevrez une lettre demain. 6. Vous m'écrirez quand vous serez en Allemagne. 7. Elles auront fini la leçon avant midi. 8. Quand vous recevrez la lettre, il aura cessé de vivre. 9. Le bon élève aura compris (*understood*) qu'il doit (*must*) travailler sérieusement. 10. Dès que vous l'aurez vu (*seen*), vous me l'écrirez.

B.—1. You will go out when I allow you (it). 2. The shepherd will shut the gate when the wolf arrives. 3. We will start as soon as we have finished the exercise. 4. I will return you your exercise-book when I have corrected it. 5. If you work well, I will reward you. 6. The servant will come down every day at seven o'clock. 7. The shepherd's dog will bite the obstinate sheep. 8. The judges will condemn the guilty. 9. The grapes will soon ripen. 10. We will begin when you have finished.

LESSON 11.—THE USE OF THE TENSES (*continued*).

CONDITIONAL MOOD.

§ 54. The present conditional tense corresponds to two English forms; *e.g.* **je chanterais** means *I should sing* or *I should be singing*.

Si cela était vrai, je serais content.

If that were true, I should be satisfied.

Si je faisais cela, je trahirais ma patrie.

If I did that, I should be betraying my country.

§ 55. The present conditional is also used in diffident statements and questions.

Je penserais plutôt le contraire.

I am inclined to think otherwise.

Auriez-vous quelque démêlé avec la justice ?

Have you any trouble with the authorities ?

§ 56. The perfect conditional tense corresponds to two English forms; *e.g.* **j'aurais chanté** means *I should have sung* or *I should have been singing*.

J'aurais déjà fini mon travail, si vous ne m'aviez pas interrompu.

I should have already finished my work, if you had not interrupted me.

Vous auriez travaillé encore, si je ne vous avais pas interrompu.

You would have been working still, if I had not interrupted you.

§ 57. The perfect conditional is often replaced by the pluperfect subjunctive.

Il eût voulu tout détruire.

He would have liked to destroy everything.

EXERCISE 11.

A.—1. Je serais riche si j'avais été prudent. 2. S'il était appliqué il réussirait. 3. Nous aurions désiré vous voir plus souvent. 4. Vous oseriez nous désobéir ! 5. Le docteur leur a dit (*told*) que le malade guérirait. 6. Si nous osions, nous vous demanderions un avis. 7. Elles auraient été contentes de (*to*) vous voir. 8. Je serais porté à croire qu'il a tort. 9. Elle aurait reçu la lettre, s'il lui avait écrit (*written*). 10. Nous aurions supposé que vous nous l'auriez rendu.

B.—1. The advice (*plur.*) of a friend would be very useful to us.
 2. You would perhaps consent to (*à*) guide us. 3. They would have played longer (*plus longtemps*), if the weather had been better.
 4. She assures me that you would consent to (*à*) accompany us.
 5. We should have gained much, if we had followed (*suivi*) the counsels of experience. 6. I would beg you to (*de*) send me books and paper.
 7. He thought that we should be too timid. 8. He would have spoken longer, but the judge interrupted him. 9. You would have learnt (*appris*) the lesson in two hours, if you had worked. 10. I should have perceived the house, but the wood concealed it.

LESSON 12.—THE IMPERATIVE MOOD.

§ 58. The second person singular and plural of the imperative mood are used as in English.

Finis ta leçon.

Finish your lesson.

Travaillez bien.

Work hard.

§ 59. The imperative has also a first person plural, the use of which is illustrated by the following example:—

Soyons charitables envers les pauvres.

Let us be charitable to the poor.

§ 60. The third person singular and plural of the imperative are taken from the present subjunctive.

Qu'il attende.

Let him wait.

Qu'ils attendent.

Let them wait.

§ 61. Pronouns governed by the imperative affirmative follow the verb in the same order as in English, and the forms *moi* and *toi* are used instead of *me* and *te*. The pronouns are joined to each other and to the verb by hyphens (§ 35).

Donnez-les-moi.

Give them to me.

Donnons-le-leur.

Let us give it to them.

NOTE 1.—Pronouns used with the third person (§ 60) follow the normal order (§ 34).

Qu'il nous le donne.

Let him give it to us.

NOTE 2.—Pronouns used with the imperative negative also follow the normal order (§ 34).

Ne me le donnez pas.

Do not give it to me.

EXERCISE 12

A.—1. Finissez la narration avant onze heures. 2. Descends de l'arbre, ou tu tomberas. 3. "Hercule, aide-moi," implora le charretier embourbé. 4. "Romps le caillou qui t'arrête, prends ton fouet," lui répondit le dieu. 5. Habitue les enfants à endurer la fatigue. 6. Apportez-lui du papier et de l'encre. 7. Remplissons notre devoir. 8. Vous avez mal écrit le devoir, recommencez-le. 9. Rendez à César ce qui est (*what belongs*) à César. 10. Georges demande le dictionnaire : donne-le-lui.

B.—1. If you have finished the copies, give them to me. 2. God said (*dit*): "Let there be light" (*Let the light be*). 3. They are asking for the grammar; let us lend it to them. 4. Let them (*fem.*) ask for the books; we will lend them to them. 5. Invite them to (*à*) stay here. 6. Let us act prudently, but let us be prompt. 7. Let us have patience. 8. Let her continue to (*à*) work courageously. 9. Go * [and] see (*infin.*) the magistrate, and ask his advice. 10. Return them the book that (*que*) they have lent you.

LESSON 13.—NEGATIVE CONJUGATION.

§ 62. The negative adverb most frequently employed in conjunction with verbs consists of the two words *ne . . . pas*; of these *ne* is the true negative, while *pas* is intensive.

§ 63. Except in the infinitive present, where both precede, *ne* comes before the finite verb and *pas* immediately follows it. Thus in compound tenses *pas* comes between the auxiliary and the participle. *Ne* may, however, be separated from the verb by pronouns (§ 31).

Obs. The negative conjugation in modern English is almost always formed by the use of *do not*, *did not*; there is no such construction in French.

§ 64. Besides the ordinary negative *ne . . . pas*, the following negative expressions are used in conjunction with verbs:—

(a) <i>ne . . . point</i> , not at all.	<i>ne . . . jamais</i> , never.
<i>ne . . . plus</i> , no more, no longer.	<i>ne . . . guère</i> , scarcely.
<i>ne . . . rien</i> , nothing.	

These follow, with regard to position, the rule given for *ne . . . pas*.

Je n'attendrai plus.

Je n'ai rien vu.

I shall wait no longer.

I have seen nothing.

* Words in square brackets are to be omitted.

Il n'a guère dormi cette nuit. **Elle ne chante jamais.**
He scarcely slept at all last night. *She never sings.*

(b) **ne . . . personne, nobody.** **ne . . . nul** } *no*
 ne . . . que, only. **ne . . . aucun** } (adjective).
 ne . . . nulle part, nowhere.

These follow the rule as to position given for **ne . . . pas** when employed with simple tenses, but in compound tenses the second word follows the participle.

Je n'ai vu personne. **Je n'ai reçu aucun argent.**
I have seen no one. *I have received no money.*
Il n'a eu qu'un ami. **Je ne l'ai trouvé nulle part.**
He has only had one friend. *I did not find him anywhere.*

(c) **ni . . . ni, neither . . . nor.**

With this negative conjunction the negative particle **ne** must be used.

Il n'a ni amis ni richesses.
He has neither friends nor wealth.

Learn the paradigm of the negative conjugation of the verb obéir (§ 241).

EXERCISE 13.

A.—1. Je ne partirai pas aujourd'hui. 2. Ils ne lui avaient pas encore répondu hier. 3. Vous ne lui avez pas rendu le livre. 4. Ne lui donnez rien, elle n'est pas malade. 5. Nous ne comprendrons jamais l'injustice. 6. La reine ne recevra ni le ministre, ni l'amiral. 7. Je n'ai nulle envie de (to) le voir. 8. Nous n'avions aucune idée de l'événement. 9. Elle n'aura guère le temps de (to) nous écrire. 10. Vous n'aurez plus d'argent à la fin du mois.

B.—1. I no longer desire to see him. 2. As for (*Quant à*) Charles, I do not like him at all (*du tout*). 3. Words do not pay debts. 4. I have only two brothers, but I have four sisters. 5. You will find nowhere a better friend. 6. They had never seized the opportunity to (*de*) learn. 7. You would not have answered if you had understood (*compris*). 8. If you had paid him, he would ask for nothing. 9. I have not sent it to him, I have not yet received it. 10. Never give it to them, they would not return it to you.

LESSON 14.—INTERROGATIVE CONJUGATION.

§ 65. Interrogation is expressed in French by inversion of the verb and its subject, *i.e.* by placing the subject after the finite verb.

Affirmative.	Interrogative.
Vous me louez.	Me louez-vous ?
<i>You praise me.</i>	<i>Do you praise me ?</i>
<i>You are praising me.</i> }	<i>Are you praising me ?</i> }
Nous avons fini.	Avons-nous fini ?
<i>We have finished.</i>	<i>Have we finished ?</i>

Obs. Only the indicative and conditional moods can be used interrogatively.

§ 66. **Est-ce que**, *is it that*, is frequently used as a periphrastic form in interrogation.

Est-ce que vous avez fini ?
Have you finished ?

NOTE.—This applies also to the rules given in § 68—70.

§ 67. When the first person singular of the present indicative is monosyllabic, **est-ce que** must be employed for the sake of euphony; *e.g.* **est-ce que je vends ?** instead of **vends-je ?** *do I sell ?*

NOTE.—Usage permits the following, in which there is no harshness :—

ai-je ? <i>have I ?</i>	puis-je ? <i>can I ?</i>
dis-je ? <i>do I say ?</i>	sais-je ? <i>do I know ?</i>
dois-je ? <i>must I ?</i>	suis-je ? <i>am I ?</i>
fais-je ? <i>am I doing ?</i>	vais-je ? <i>am I going ?</i>
fuis-je ? <i>do I flee ?</i>	vois-je ? <i>do I see ?</i>

§ 68. The above form of interrogative conjugation is used when the subject is a personal pronoun. If the subject is a substantive it is placed before the verb, and one of the personal pronouns, *il*, *elle*, *ils*, *elles*, agreeing with the subject, is placed after the finite verb.

Henri est-il allé au théâtre ?
Did Henry go (or has Henry gone) to the theatre ?
Ma sœur dansait-elle ?
Was my sister dancing ?

NOTE.—Or, **est-ce que Henri est allé au théâtre ?** **est-ce que ma sœur dansait ?**

§ 69. The following interrogative words must come first in a sentence :—

combien , <i>how much?</i>	que (accusative), <i>what?</i>
comment , <i>how?</i>	quand , <i>when?</i>
où , <i>where?</i>	

Quand votre frère arrivera-t-il ?

When will your brother arrive?

Learn the paradigm of the interrogative conjugation of the verb chanter (§ 242).

EXERCISE 14.

A.—1. Parlez-vous allemand avec le professeur? 2. Aime-t-elle l'odeur de la violette? 3. Avez-vous trouvé la leçon facile? 4. Gagnaient-ils beaucoup d'argent? 5. Aura-t-il fini avant huit heures? 6. Étudieront-elles la musique en Italie? 7. Aimera-t-il la campagne? 8. Est-ce qu'il a mérité la croix d'honneur? 9. Est-ce qu'ils le leur donneraient sans regret? 10. Le professeur parla-t-il éloquemment?

B.—1. Have I given you too much work? 2. Shall we bring it you this (*ce*) evening? 3. Do I know English well? 4. Am I dreaming, or (*ou bien*) am I awake? 5. Has Peter's sister had some tea? 6. How are (*go*) you to-day? 7. How many mistakes did the pupil have? 8. What (*Que*) are you asking me? 9. Where have you sent it? 10. Am I taking your place?

LESSON 15.—NEGATIVE-INTERROGATIVE CONJUGATION.

§ 70. To turn any part of a verb into the negative-interrogative form, first write the part in question negatively, and then place the nominative pronoun immediately after the finite verb; *e.g.*, first person plural of the conditional perfect of *attendre*, *to wait*.

AFFIRMATIVE: nous aurions attendu.

NEGATIVE: nous n'aurions pas attendu.

NEGATIVE-INTERROGATIVE: n'aurions-nous pas attendu?

§ 71. The rules given in §§ 66–9 for the interrogative conjugation apply also to the negative-interrogative conjugation.

Est-ce que je ne parle pas correctement?

Do I not speak correctly?

Votre frère n'a-t-il pas reçu ma lettre ?
Has not your brother received my letter ?

Où notre ami n'a-t-il pas été le bienvenu ?
Where has our friend not been welcome ?

§ 72. In English, interrogation is often expressed by elliptical questions placed at the end of a sentence; *e.g.* *You are not ready yet, are you ? They are coming, are they not ? You do not know him, do you ?* Such elliptical questions are not permissible in French, but are, in every case, replaced by *n'est-ce pas ? is it not ?*

Vous n'êtes pas encore prêt, n'est-ce pas ?
Ils viennent, n'est-ce pas ?
Vous ne le connaissez pas, n'est-ce pas ?

§ 73. When a negative question is answered in the affirmative, *oui* must be replaced by *si*.

N'avez-vous pas encore dîné ? Si.
Have you not dined yet ? Yes, I have.

Learn the paradigm of the negative-interrogative conjugation of the verb agir (§ 243).

EXERCISE 15.

A.—1. Ne finira-t-il pas bientôt ? 2. Est-ce que vous ne les avertirez pas ? 3. N'auriez-vous pas saisi le voleur ? 4. Le docteur ne guérira-t-il pas le malade ? 5. Quand le mérite n'a-t-il pas été récompensé ? 6. Ne réussiront-ils pas dans leur entreprise ? 7. Est-ce que je ne vous avais pas donné de bons conseils ? 8. Où n'avez-vous pas voyagé ? 9. Les fruits auront mûri, n'est-ce pas ? 10. N'aura-t-elle pas puni les élèves indociles ?

B.—1. You will receive him politely, will you not ? 2. Will you not obey them (*dat.*) ? Yes. 3. Used not John to smoke ? Yes. 4. You will not betray me, will you ? 5. Would you not have obeyed me if I had not punished you ? 6. Did not the class end at four o'clock ? 7. Did you not assemble the pupils before the lesson (*classe*) ? 8. Where have the English not established colonies ? 9. Did you not blush for (*de*) such bad (*a so bad*) conduct ? 10. Were you not still playing at midnight ?

LESSON 16.—PASSIVE VOICE.

§ 74. The passive voice of a transitive verb is formed with the past participle of that verb combined with the auxiliary être, *to be*.

§ 75. It should be observed that, in the passive voice, the past participle agrees, like an adjective, in gender and number with the subject of the verb.

J'ai été loué or louée.

I (masculine or feminine) have been praised.

Elle a été louée.

She has been praised.

Ces petites filles seront louées.

These little girls will be praised.

§ 76. The passive voice is used in French less frequently than in English. It is often replaced (i) by a reflexive verb (§ 82), (ii) by the use of the indefinite pronoun *on* (§ 170), (iii) by an active construction.

(i) **Cela s'entend.**

That is understood.

(ii) **On dit qu'il est fou.**

He is said to be mad.

(iii) **Mon père me l'a dit.**

I was told so by my father.

Learn the paradigm of the passive voice of aimer (§ 244).

EXERCISE 16.

A.—1. Nous sommes récompensés quand nous le méritons. 2. Nansen a été reçu avec enthousiasme. 3. Les célèbres voyageurs furent acclamés par la foule. 4. Elles seraient ravies de (*to*) vous recevoir. 5. Nous fûmes frappés de (*by*) la grandeur du spectacle. 6. Ne seraient-ils pas étonnés de vous voir? 7. On a érigé un monument à l'endroit où les soldats ont été enterrés. 8. Une expédition n'avait-elle pas été envoyée à la recherche de l'explorateur? 9. Le charbon se trouve presque partout en Angleterre. 10. L'imprimerie fut inventée par Gutenberg.

B.—1. The noise of the fall of (the) Niagara is heard from very far. 2. Was not the Hôtel des Invalides founded by Lewis XIV.? 3. The plains of America have been cultivated by the European colonists. 4. A magnificent cup would have been awarded to him. 5. I was assured that you had not been diligent. 6. Will not the flowers be watered? 7. It will be announced to them that the captain has been killed by the rebels. 8. The exercises have not yet been corrected. 9. The lion is found in the forests of Africa. 10. I am assured that you have been deceived.

LESSON 17.—INTRANSITIVE VERBS.

§ 77. Most intransitive verbs form their compound tenses, like transitive verbs, with the auxiliary *avoir*, but the following twelve, with their compounds, are conjugated with *être*.

<i>aller, to go.</i>	<i>partir, to depart.</i>
<i>arriver, to arrive.</i>	<i>rester, to remain.</i>
<i>décéder, to die.</i>	<i>retourner, to go back.</i>
<i>entrer, to enter.</i>	<i>sortir, to go out.</i>
<i>mourir, to die.</i>	<i>tomber, to fall.</i>
<i>naître, to be born.</i>	<i>venir, to come.</i>
<i>descendre</i>	<i>monter</i>

§ 78. The past participle of intransitive verbs conjugated with *être* agrees in gender and number with the subject, but remains singular when used in addressing one person only.

Vous êtes arrivée de bonne heure, Marie.
You have arrived early, Mary.

Learn the paradigm of the conjugation of the intransitive verb tomber (§ 248).

EXERCISE 17.

A.—1. La rivière, qui avait débordé, est maintenant rentrée dans son lit. 2. La neige a disparu (*disappeared*) entièrement. 3. Les pierres du temple sont dispersées; les fêtes d'Israël ont cessé. 4. Elle est allée deux fois à Paris. 5. Ne sont-ils pas arrivés à leur destination? 6. Votre père n'était-il pas décédé avant votre mère? 7. Ils seraient entrés, s'ils avaient osé. 8. Les hirondelles sont revenues avec le printemps. 9. Ne sont-elles pas retournées en Suisse? 10. Le père et la mère de Jean sont morts.

B.—1. I came when you had gone out. 2. How long have they stayed with you? 3. They had started for a long journey. 4. The illusions of youth have soon passed away. 5. Victor Hugo died in 1885; he was born in 1802. 6. Queen Victoria has already reigned more than (*de*) sixty years. 7. The thermometer has risen five degrees (*de cinq degrés*) in an hour. 8. Where is Joseph? He has gone up to the loft. 9. He died as he lived. 10. He has disappeared (*disparu*) like a flash.

LESSON 18.—REFLEXIVE VERBS.

§ 79. Reflexive verbs are those which are accompanied by the reflexive pronouns—

<i>me, myself</i>	<i>nous, ourselves</i>
<i>te, thyself</i>	<i>vous, yourselves</i>
<i>se, himself, herself</i>	<i>se, themselves</i>

§ 80. Reflexive verbs are divided into two classes :—

- (i) Verbs naturally reflexive ;
- (ii) Verbs accidentally reflexive.

To the first class belong verbs which are never used otherwise than reflexively ; the second class includes transitive or intransitive verbs which are occasionally thus employed. Thus, the verb *se repentir*, *to repent*, is naturally reflexive, for there is no verb *repentir* ; on the other hand, *se lever*, *to get up*, is accidentally reflexive, *lever*, *to raise*, being a transitive verb.

§ 81. In English many verbs can be used either transitively or intransitively without change of form ; e.g. *to turn*, *to stop*, *to wash*. The intransitive force of such verbs is usually expressed in French by a reflexive form ; reflexive verbs are consequently much more freely employed in French than in English.

Arrêtez le fiacre (transitive).

Stop the cab.

Le fiacre s'arrêta (reflexive).

The cab stopped (intransitive).

§ 82. In French a reflexive verb often takes the place of an English passive form (§ 76), provided that no definite agent is expressed or implied.

Le lion se trouve en Afrique.

Lions are found in Africa.

Mon frère s'appelle Henri.

My brother is named Henry.

§ 83. The reflexive pronoun *se* may have a reciprocal sense.

Ils se détestent.

They detest each other.

§ 84. All reflexive verbs form their compound tenses with the auxiliary être. In the conjugation of a verb naturally reflexive, the past participle agrees in gender and number with the reflexive pronoun, and hence with the subject. The agreement of the past participle in the case of verbs accidentally reflexive is dealt with in § 189.

Learn the paradigm of the reflexive verb se baigner (§ 249).

EXERCISE 18.

A.—1. Je vous ai loué hier, mais je pense que je me suis trompé.
2. Comment vous appelez-vous, Monsieur? 3. Je me nomme Jacques Bonhomme. 4. Nous nous apercevons du danger quand il est trop tard. 5. Je me levais à six heures du matin. 6. Où est Caroline? Elle s'habille. 7. Vous habituerez-vous en (to) Allemagne? 8. Les soldats ont succombé, mais ils se sont bravement battus. 9. Ils se retournèrent à l'appel de l'officier. 10. Lavez-vous le visage et les mains sitôt que vous vous éveillez.

B.—1. We have bathed in the Nile. 2. Show yourselves without fear and without reproach. 3. Let us laugh at the exaggerations of the boaster. 4. Apply to me if you are in difficulties (*embarrassé*). 5. They no longer care about (*de*) our distress. 6. Fighting for liberty, the soldiers of the Republic have covered themselves with (*de*) glory. 7. At what time (*À quelle heure*) do you go to bed? 8. How has the pure gold changed to (*en*) a vile lead? 9. We would have stopped at the castle if we had remembered your orders. 10. I venture to hope that you will behave well.

LESSON 19.—IMPERSONAL VERBS.

§ 85. Impersonal verbs are those which are used only in the third person singular. They are divided into two classes:—

- (i) Verbs naturally impersonal;
- (ii) Verbs accidentally impersonal.

The first class consists of verbs which are never used otherwise than impersonally, while the latter includes ordinary verbs which may be used in the third person singular with some special meaning.

Il faut travailler pour réussir (naturally impersonal).

It is necessary to work in order to succeed.

Il tombe de la pluie (accidentally impersonal).

Rain is falling (lit. *There is falling some rain*).

§ 86. The following are the most important impersonal verbs. It will be observed that a large number of them denote various states of the weather; of the rest, some are also used personally. Those to which a reference is attached are irregular in conjugation.

FIRST CONJUGATION.

il arrive, <i>it happens.</i>	il grêle, <i>it hails.</i>
il éclaire, <i>it lightens.</i>	il importe, <i>it is important.</i>
il dégèle, <i>it thaws</i> (§ 264).	il neige, <i>it snows</i> (§ 274).
il gèle, <i>it freezes</i> (§ 261).	il tonne, <i>it thunders.</i>
il y va (de), <i>it is a question of</i> (§ 281).	

SECOND CONJUGATION.

il s'agit (de), *it is a question of.*

THIRD CONJUGATION.

il faut, <i>it is necessary</i> (§ 309).	il pleut, <i>it rains</i> (§ 304).
il vaut mieux, <i>it is better</i> (§ 308).	

FOURTH CONJUGATION.

il paraît, *it appears* (§ 314).

§ 87. The third person singular of the verb *faire*, *to do*, *to make* (§ 344), enters into a number of impersonal locutions connected with the weather.

il fait beau, <i>it is fine.</i>	il fait doux, <i>it is mild.</i>
il fait du brouillard, <i>it is foggy.</i>	il fait jour, <i>it is daylight.</i>
il fait chaud, <i>it is warm.</i>	il fait nuit, <i>it is dark.</i>

§ 88. The verb *être* is often used impersonally with a predicative adjective.

il est évident, <i>it is evident.</i>	il est possible, <i>it is possible.</i>
il est important, <i>it is important.</i>	il est nécessaire, <i>it is necessary.</i>

Learn the paradigm of the impersonal verb grêler (§ 253).

EXERCISE 19.

A.—1. Il arrive au plus habile de (to) se tromper. 2. Un jour arrivera où (when) il faudra s'incliner devant le fait accompli. 3. Quel temps fait-il? Il fait beau. 4. Quand nous partîmes, il faisait un vent violent. 5. Il tonne très fort; il grêlera ou il pleuvra. 6. S'il ne faisait pas si froid, il neigerait. 7. Il s'agissait de prendre

une résolution. 8. De quoi s'agira-t-il au conseil des ministres? 9. Il se serait agi du conflit turco-grec. 10. Nous monterons à cheval demain, s'il fait plus doux.

B.—1. After so cold a (*a so cold*) reception, it is evident that I must (*dois*) retire. 2. In diplomacy it is important not to (*de*) speak too much. 3. It was lightning and thundering; the weather was frightful. 4. The hare of the fable thought that it was a question of his honour to start late. 5. We must die some (*un*) day. 6. When it is day in Scotland, it is night in Tasmania. 7. The good farmer rises as soon as (*aussitôt que*) it is light. 8. It was not necessary to lend them money. 9. It is better to suffer than to die. 10. It is possible, it is even necessary, to (*de*) increase the fleet.

LESSON 20.—THE IMPERSONAL VERB Y AVOIR.

§ 89. The impersonal *il y a* (lit. *it has there*) is used as the equivalent of the English *there is, there are*.

Il y a beaucoup de monde au concert.

There are many people at the concert.

Il y avait un oiseau dans la cage.

There was a bird in the cage.

§ 90. *Il y a* is also used in many phrases expressing time.

Je l'ai vu il y a trois semaines.

I saw him three weeks ago.

Il y a une heure que je vous attends.

I have been waiting for you for an hour.

Combien y a-t-il que cela est arrivé?

How long is it since that happened?

§ 91. *Il y a*, in its ordinary sense, is sometimes replaced by *il est*.

Il était une fois une petite fille qui portait un chaperon rouge.

There was once a little girl who wore a red hood.

§ 92. *Il y a* must not be confused with *voilà, there is, there are*, and *voici, here is, here are*, which are used to call attention to some object present.

Voilà mes frères.

There are my brothers.

Voici votre clef.

Here is your key.

NOTE.—Pronouns used with *voilà, voici*, are put in the accusative.

Le voilà!

There he is.

Nous voici.

Here we are.

Learn the paradigm of the impersonal verb y avoir (§ 254).

EXERCISE 20.

A.—1. Il y a longtemps que ces deux nations se sont querellées. 2. L'astronome avait annoncé qu'il y aurait une éclipse. 3. Nous pensions qu'il y avait des armes ici. 4. Y a-t-il un bon théâtre à Cambridge? 5. Il n'y avait pas de soldats allemands en Crète. 6. Depuis quand êtes-vous en France? Il y aura deux ans demain. 7. Il y a eu de grandes fêtes à Paris pendant la visite du tsar. 8. Voici le livre que vous m'avez demandé. 9. Voilà un beau sujet de guerre! 10. Quand y aura-t-il des fleurs dans le jardin?

B.—1. Were there not many protests? 2. No, there was only one claim. 3. Here is some good fruit (*plur.*); eat it. 4. There is the coffee which (*que*) you ordered. 5. Have you not been in Cambridge two years? 6. Yes, two years at Easter. 7. The bell has been ringing for a quarter of an hour (*quart d'heure*). 8. Here is a man worthy of confidence. 9. There is a child at the door. 10. Where have there not been storms this year (*cette année*)?

LESSON 21.—DEMONSTRATIVE ADJECTIVES
AND PRONOUNS.

THE DEMONSTRATIVE ADJECTIVE.

§ 93. The demonstrative adjective in French has four forms.

	Singular.		Plural.
<i>Masc.</i>	ce, cet,	} <i>this or that</i>	ces, these or those
<i>Fem.</i>	cette,		

§ 94. In the masculine singular *cet* is used before a substantive or adjective beginning with a vowel or h- mute.

ce garçon, this boy or that boy. *cet ami, this friend or that friend.*
ce héros, this hero or that hero. *cet homme, this man or that man.*
cet heureux événement, this happy event.
cette ardoise, this slate. *ces ardoises, these slates.*

§ 95. The demonstrative adjective must be repeated before each substantive.

Ce tableau, cet oiseau, et ces fleurs sont à ma sœur.
This (or that) picture, this (or that) bird, and these (or those) flowers are my sister's.

§ 96. When *this* and *that* are used in the same sentence in English, the distinction is preserved in French by *ci* (shortened from *ici*), *here*, and *là*, *there*, placed after the substantives and connected therewith by hyphens.

Ce cheval-ci et ce chien-là sont à moi.

This horse and that dog are mine.

DEMONSTRATIVE PRONOUNS.

§ 97. The Demonstrative Pronouns are :—

Masc. Sing.	<i>celui, he</i> } <i>that,</i>	<i>celui-ci</i> } <i>this one,</i>	<i>celui-là</i> } <i>that one,</i>
Fem. Sing.	<i>celle, she</i> } <i>the one</i>	<i>celle-ci</i> } <i>the latter</i>	<i>celle-là</i> } <i>the former</i>
Masc. Plur.	<i>ceux</i> } <i>those</i>	<i>ceux-ci</i> } <i>these,</i>	<i>ceux-là</i> } <i>those,</i>
Fem. Plur.	<i>celles</i> } <i>those</i>	<i>celles-ci</i> } <i>the latter</i>	<i>celles-là</i> } <i>the former</i>
Neut. Sing.	<i>ce, it, that, etc.</i>	<i>ceci, this</i>	<i>cela, that</i>

§ 98. *Celui, celle*, and their plurals, *ceux, celles*, must always be followed by the preposition *de* or a relative pronoun. They usually refer to a substantive preceding; when they do not, they can only be used of persons.

Voici mon chapeau et celui de ma sœur.

Here is my hat and my sister's.

Ceux qui font des heureux sont les vrais conquérants.

Those who make men happy are the true conquerors.

§ 99. *Celui-ci*, etc., *celui-là*, etc., are used as real demonstratives, i.e. to point out or indicate, *celui-ci* referring to the nearer object, *celui-là* to the more remote.

Vos livres sont mieux reliés que ceux-là.

Your books are better bound than those.

Achetez des prunes et des marrons; mangez celles-là et gardez ceux-ci.

Buy some plums and chestnuts; eat the former and keep the latter.

EXERCISE 21.

A.—1. Ce jeune homme et cette jeune fille sont fiancés. 2. Cet oiseau ne se trouve qu'en Australie. 3. Où avez-vous tué ce héron et ces canards? 4. Cet abricot n'est-il pas plus mûr que cette pêche? 5. Est-ce que ces messieurs et ces dames ne sont pas Espagnols? 6. Le chapeau de Julie est plus beau que celui de Louise. 7. Voici de belle étoffe et voilà de mauvais drap: retournez celui-ci et gardez

celle-là. 8. Est-ce que vous lui donnez ceci ou cela? 9. Ceux qui se serviront (*who use*) de l'épée périront par l'épée. 10. La marine de cette contrée est plus forte que celle des États-Unis.

B.—1. That pen is too hard ; I will take this one. 2. That newspaper is English, this is French. 3. Here are oranges and grapes ; will you take the latter or the former? 4. He who (*qui*) arrives (*fut.*) the first at the goal will receive the prize. 5. Paris awarded the apple to her whom (*que*) he found the most beautiful (*la plus belle*). 6. This famous traveller has explored central Africa. 7. This imposing monastery and that pretty church have been built at the same period. 8. This pearl is finer than that diamond. 9. These dogs and those cats come (*sont originaires*) from Persia. 10. Shall you choose this jacket or that mantle?

LESSON 22.—DEMONSTRATIVE PRONOUNS

(continued).

THE DEMONSTRATIVE Ce.

§ 100. The demonstrative pronoun **ce** is used (i) as the subject of the verb *être*, (ii) in combination with the relative pronouns. The latter use is dealt with in § 119.

§ 101. **Ce**, as the subject of *être*, may replace the pronouns *il*, *ils*, *elle*, *elles*.

C'est un farceur.

He is a humbug.

C'est une coquette.

She is a flirt.

Ce sont des aventuriers.

They are adventurers.

NOTE.—**Ce** must not be used if the nominative complement is an adjective or a substantive used without article (§ 20).

Il est paresseux.

He is lazy.

Il est médecin.

He is a doctor.

§ 102. **C'est** is also used impersonally for *il est*, *it is*, before a proper noun, a common noun preceded by any determining word, or a pronoun.

C'est Charles.

It is Charles.

C'est mon médecin.

It is my doctor.

C'est nous.

It is we.

NOTE.—**Ce sont** must be used before a third person plural.

Ce sont les enfants.

It is the children.

§ 103. Ceci and cela are used as the equivalents of the English *this* and *that*, when not referring to a substantive already mentioned.

Ceci est la maison que Jacques a bâtie.

This is the house that Jack built.

Pourquoi vous a-t-il donné cela ?

Why did he give you that ?

EXERCISE 22.

A.—1. Ne l'écoutez pas : c'est un menteur. 2. Est-ce vous qui m'avez appelé ? 3. Ne lui répondez pas ; ce serait lui faire trop d'honneur. 4. N'est-ce pas une honte pour un pays ? 5. Ce sont les Français qui ont creusé le canal de Suez. 6. Ce furent des voyageurs anglais qui explorèrent l'Afrique centrale. 7. Si cela arrivait, je serais surpris (*surprised*). 8. Vous arrivez tard, ce me semble. 9. Ce ne sont que des calomnies. 10. C'est nous qui avons frappé à la porte.

B.—1. Is not your brother a merchant ? No, he is an engineer. 2. Is not that a dragoon going by (*qui passe*) ? No, it is a hussar. 3. It is the daughters of the Queen who will open the exhibition. 4. He is a man without education and without principles. 5. Are they the ambassadors of the great powers ? 6. It is Mary coming in (*qui rentre*), for dinner. 7. It is they (*eux*) who have gained the victory. 8. Of all flowers it is the rose that I like best. 9. "Who (*qui*) is the king ?" asked Henry IV. "Faith !" replied the peasant, "it is you or I" (*moi*). 10. This is for you and that is for me (*moi*).

LESSON 23.—POSSESSIVE ADJECTIVES AND PRONOUNS.

POSSESSIVE ADJECTIVES.

§ 104. The possessive adjectives are :—

		Singular.		Plural.	
		Masc.	Fem.	For both genders.	
Sing.	1st Person	mon	ma	mes	my
	2nd "	ton	ta	tes	thy
	3rd "	son	sa	ses	his, her, its
Plur.	1st "	notre		nos	our
	2nd "	votre		vos	your
	3rd "	leur		leurs	their

Obs. These should be carefully distinguished from the corresponding possessive pronouns (§ 108).

§ 105. The possessive adjective agrees with the thing possessed, and not with the possessor.

Mon mari, *my husband.* **Ta femme**, *your wife.*
Son parapluie, *his umbrella or her umbrella.*
Sa sœur, *his sister or her sister.*
Ses sœurs, *his sisters or her sisters.*

§ 106. When a feminine word begins with a vowel or h- mute, the forms *mon*, *ton*, *son*, must be used, instead of *ma*, *ta*, *sa*, in order to avoid hiatus—i.e. the retention of an unelided vowel before a word beginning with a vowel.

mon ardoise (instead of **ma ardoise**), *my slate.*
ton horloge (instead of **ta horloge**), *your clock.*

§ 107. The possessive adjective must be repeated before each substantive in French, and must agree with it in gender and number.

Mon père, ma mère, et mes frères sont ici.
My father, mother, and brothers are here.

POSSESSIVE PRONOUNS.

§ 108. The possessive pronouns are :—

	Singular.		Plural.		
	Masculine.	Feminine.	Masculine.	Feminine.	
1st Pers. Sing.	le mien	la mienne	les miens	les miennes	<i>mine</i>
2nd „ „	le tien	la tienne	les tiens	les tiennes	<i>thine</i>
3rd „ „	le sien	la sienne	les siens	les siennes	<i>his, hers</i>
1st „ Plur.	le nôtre	la nôtre	les nôtres		<i>ours</i>
2nd „ „	le vôtre	la vôtre	les vôtres		<i>yours</i>
3rd „ „	le leur	la leur	les leurs		<i>theirs</i>

§ 109. The possessive pronouns may be declined as follows with the aid of prepositions :—

	Singular.		Plural.		
	Masculine.	Feminine.	Masculine.	Feminine.	
Nom.	le mien	la mienne	les miens	les miennes	<i>mine</i>
Gen.	du mien	de la mienne	des miens	des miennes	<i>of mine</i>
Dat.	au mien	à la mienne	aux miens	aux miennes	<i>to mine</i>
Acc.	le mien	la mienne	les miens	les miennes	<i>mine</i>

The others may be similarly declined.

§ 110. Possessive pronouns take the gender and number of the substantive to which they refer.

Ma montre n'est pas aussi bonne que la sienne.

My watch is not so good as his (or hers).

§ 111. As the predicate of the verb *to be*, the possessive pronoun is frequently replaced by a disjunctive personal pronoun (§§ 134-43) and the preposition *à*.

{ Cette montre est la mienne, mais cette pendule est la leur.

{ Cette montre est à moi, mais cette pendule est à eux (or à elles).

This watch is mine, but that clock is theirs.

EXERCISE 23.

A.—1. Donnez-moi ma canne et mon chapeau, s'il vous plaît. 2. Voici ton pardessus, ta cravate et tes gants. 3. Ma sœur est arrivée avec son mari et ses enfants. 4. Ta cousine a-t-elle écrit à son amie ou à sa sœur? 5. Son épée a été brisée dans sa main. 6. Roland appelait sa vaillante épée "Durandal." 7. Le drapeau de votre pays est bleu, celui du mien est blanc. 8. J'ai parlé à votre sœur; parlerez-vous à la mienne? 9. J'ai parlé de vos amis et des miens, des leurs et des siens. 10. Cette maison est à moi, cette ferme est à nous et ces champs sont à eux.

B.—1. Her dress is more fashionable than mine. 2. "I will respect," said (*dit*) the general, "your laws, customs, and religion." 3. Their letters will reach them (*will arrive to them*) at their address. 4. Our habits, our garments, our language, are to them a subject of astonishment. 5. After the submission of the Malagasies, the general gave them back their arms. 6. This book is mine, here are thine and theirs. 7. Is not your writing better than his? 8. Mary has given me your exercise and hers. 9. Our dogs and yours are better than theirs. 10. Your friends have disclosed (*exposé*) their projects to me; I have declared to them that I preferred yours to theirs.

LESSON 24.—RELATIVE PRONOUNS.

§ 112. The relative pronouns are *qui*, *who*, *which*, *that*; *lequel*, *who*, *which*; *ce qui*, *what* (*that which*).

§ 113. *Qui* is declined as follows, the singular and plural being identical in form:—

Of Persons.	Of Animals and Things.
Nom. qui , <i>who</i> .	qui , <i>which</i> , <i>that</i> .
Gen. de qui , <i>dont</i> , <i>of whom</i> .	dont , <i>of which</i> .
Dat. à qui , <i>to whom</i> .	(auquel, etc., to which) .
Acc. que , <i>whom</i> .	que , <i>which</i> , <i>that</i> .

§ 114. The relative pronoun *lequel* is declined as follows:—

	Singular.		Plural.		
	Masc.	Fem.	Masc.	Fem.	
Nom.	<i>lequel</i>	<i>laquelle</i>	<i>lesquels</i>	<i>lesquelles</i>	<i>which</i>
Gen.	<i>duquel</i>	<i>de laquelle</i>	<i>desquels</i>	<i>desquelles</i>	<i>of which</i>
Dat.	<i>auquel</i>	<i>à laquelle</i>	<i>auxquels</i>	<i>auxquelles</i>	<i>to which</i>
Acc.	<i>lequel</i>	<i>laquelle</i>	<i>lesquels</i>	<i>lesquelles</i>	<i>which</i>

§ 115. The omission of the relative pronoun, so common in English, is never found in French.

Avez-vous trouvé le livre que vous cherchiez ?

Have you found the book you were looking for ?

§ 116. *Qui*, after a preposition, can only refer to persons; in reference to animals or things, one of the various forms of *lequel* must be used.

Les assassins par qui il fut tué ont été pendus.

The assassins by whom he was killed have been hanged.

C'est l'étude à laquelle je consacre mes loisirs.

This is the study to which I devote my leisure.

§ 117. The genitive *dont* may be used of persons or things, but must always come next to its antecedent.

Alexandre fut un héros dont nous admirons les exploits.

Alexander was a hero whose exploits we admire.

Le cheval dont je parlais est mort.

The horse of which I was speaking is dead.

§ 118. When *dont* cannot come next to its antecedent it is replaced by *de qui*, *duquel*, etc.

Le monsieur dans la famille de qui (or duquel) il avait été domestique.

The gentleman in whose family he had been a servant.

§ 119. *Ce qui* is the demonstrative pronoun *ce* in conjunction with the relative *qui*, and is used as the equivalent of the English relative *what*; it may be thus declined:—

Nom. **ce qui**, *that which, what.*

Gen. **ce dont**, *that of which.*

Dat. **ce à quoi**, *that to which.*

Acc. **ce que**, *that which, what.*

Il aime ce qui est juste et équitable.

He likes what is just and fair.

Je ne comprends pas ce dont vous parlez.

I do not understand what you are talking about.

Ce à quoi elle pense est un secret.

What she is thinking of is a secret.

J'aime ce que vous aimez.

I like what you like.

§ 120. **Lequel.**—As has been stated (§ 116), **lequel**, in its various forms, must be used in prepositional constructions relating to animals and things. **Lequel** may also be employed as a relative in other constructions, but its use is not to be recommended except when its variation for gender will remove ambiguity.

L'homme à qui (or auquel) j'ai confié l'affaire m'a trahi.

The man to whom I entrusted the matter has played me false.

Je suis allé voir la femme de mon cocher, laquelle est très malade.

I have been to see my coachman's wife, who is very ill.

Obs. Here the use of **qui** would leave doubt as to whether the coachman or his wife was ill.

EXERCISE 24.

A.—1. Le petit garçon qui joue dans la cour est le fils de la dame qui chante si bien. 2. C'est l'orateur qui a parlé sur le sujet qui vous intéresse. 3. Qui avez-vous rencontré dans votre promenade? 4. Voici l'adversaire avec qui vous vous battez, et les fleurets avec lesquels vous tirerez. 5. Le tabac dont vous faites (*make*) usage n'est pas bon. 6. L'élève dont vous vantez le mérite, n'est-il pas un peu paresseux? 7. Ce qui m'étonne, c'est votre ignorance. 8. Voici la maison pour l'achat de laquelle je vendrai ma prairie. 9. Voici l'élève auquel j'accorderai le prix. 10. Tout ce qui brille n'est pas or.

B.—1. The lady with whom we talked yesterday has left. 2. It is the fish which you have caught (*pêché*) that will be served at dinner. 3. This man whom you esteem is he who has betrayed his country. 4. I have profited by (*de*) what you have taught me. 5. What I was speaking of to you yesterday has come to pass (*arrivé*). 6. It is exactly what I was alluding (*faisais allusion*) to. 7. What I admire in you is your great coolness. 8. Here are the persons of whom I spoke to you. 9. The hedges between which we walk are covered with (*couvertes de*) flowers. 10. There is the man of whom I was speaking to you.

LESSON 25.—INTERROGATIVE ADJECTIVES AND PRONOUNS.

THE INTERROGATIVE ADJECTIVE.

§ 121. The interrogative adjective has four forms:—

	Singular.	Plural.	
Masc.	quel	quels	}
Fem.	quelle	quelles	
			<i>which?</i> <i>what?</i>

§ 122. *Quel* may be either directly or indirectly interrogative.

Quelle route dois-je suivre? } Direct question.
Which road must I follow?

Dites-moi quelle route je dois suivre. } Indirect question.
Tell me which road I must follow.

§ 123. *Quel* also corresponds to the English *What a . . . !* used in exclamations.

Quel dommage! *What a pity!*

INTERROGATIVE PRONOUNS.

§ 124. The interrogative pronouns are *qui?* *who?* *que?* *quoi?* *what?* *lequel?* *which?* *Lequel* is declined in the same way as the relative pronoun.

	Singular and Plural.	Singular.
Nom.	<i>qui?</i> <i>who?</i>	<i>que?</i> <i>what?</i>
Gen.	<i>de qui?</i> <i>of whom?</i>	<i>de quoi?</i> <i>of what?</i>
Dat.	<i>à qui?</i> <i>to whom?</i>	<i>à quoi?</i> <i>to what?</i>
Acc.	<i>qui?</i> <i>whom?</i>	<i>que?</i> <i>what?</i>

§ 125. The interrogative pronoun *qui*, in its various cases, is often replaced by the following locution:—

Nom.	<i>qui est-ce qui?</i>	<i>who (is it that)?</i>
Gen.	<i>de qui est-ce que?</i>	<i>of whom (is it that)?</i>
Dat.	<i>à qui est-ce que?</i>	<i>to whom (is it that)?</i>
Acc.	<i>qui est-ce que?</i>	<i>who (is it that)?</i>

Qui vous a dit de sortir?
Qui est-ce qui vous a dit de sortir? }
Who has told you to go out?

De qui parle-t-il ? }
 De qui est-ce qu'il parle ? }
Of whom is he speaking ?
 À qui parlez-vous ? }
 À qui est-ce que vous parlez ? }
To whom are you speaking ?
 Qui cherchent-ils ? }
 Qui est-ce qu'ils cherchent ? }
Whom are they seeking ?

§ 126. The various cases of *que*, or *quoi*, may be similarly replaced. In the nominative the simple form *que* is rarely used.

Nom. qu'est-ce qui ? *what (is it that) ?*
 Gen. de quoi est-ce que ? *of what (is it that) ?*
 Dat. à quoi est-ce que ? *to what (is it that) ?*
 Acc. qu'est-ce que ? *what (is it that) ?*

Qu'est-ce qui vous empêche de sortir ?
What prevents you from going out ?

De quoi parle-t-il ? }
 De quoi est-ce qu'il parle ? }
Of what is he speaking ?

À quoi travaille-t-il ? }
 À quoi est-ce qu'il travaille ? }
At what is he working ?

Que dit-il ? }
 Qu'est-ce qu'il dit ? }
What does he say ?

NOTE.—The construction with all prepositions is the same as with *à* and *de*; e.g. *contre qui êtes-vous fâché ?* *with whom are you angry ?*
en quoi consiste la différence ? *wherein consists the difference ?*

§ 127. *Lequel*, in its various forms, is used, like the English *which*, when there is a choice of several persons or things.

Lequel de ces garçons est votre fils ?
Which of these boys is your son ?
 Voici deux plumes ; laquelle préférez-vous ?
Here are two pens ; which do you prefer ?

EXERCISE 25.

A.—1. Quel parfum et quelle couleur préférez-vous ? 2. Voulez-vous me dire quelle leçon je dois (*am to*) préparer ? 3. Quels braves régiments ! Quelle admirable discipline ! 4. Qui demandez-vous ? À qui voulez-vous parler ? 5. Qui est-ce que vous attendez ? 6. Qu'est-ce qui vous plaira dans cette collection ? 7. À quoi vous occupez-vous maintenant ? 8. Qui est-ce qui vous enseignera l'anglais ? 9. Pour qui sont ces armes ? À quoi sont-elles destinées ? 10. Qui est-ce qui prendra soin de mes fleurs ?

B.—1. For (*à*) what will that serve ? 2. On what do you base so severe a judgment ? 3. Who will fill this dignified post ? 4. Of whom are you speaking ? 5. Of what was he accused ? 6. What have you found in your exploration ? 7. Which of these two photographs is the better ? 8. Of which of these subjects shall you speak ? 9. What shall you feed your horse with ? 10. For which of these ladies is this rich fan ?

LESSON 26.—IDIOMATIC USES OF THE PERSONAL PRONOUNS.

§ 128. *Le, la, les*, which are, strictly speaking, accusatives, are used with substantival force as nominative complements to the verb *être, to be*, in cases where no complement is required in English.

Êtes-vous la mère de cet enfant ? Je la suis.

Are you the mother of this child ? I am (i.e. I am she).

Êtes-vous les gens de la noce ? Nous les sommes.

Are you the wedding party ? We are (i.e. We are they).

§ 129. In reference to a substantive used generically, or in reference to an adjective, the invariable neuter pronoun *le* is used with adjectival force as a complement.

Êtes-vous mère ? Je le suis.

Are you a mother ? I am (i.e. I am such).

Êtes-vous malades ? Nous le serons bientôt.

Are you ill ? We soon shall be (i.e. shall be ill).

NOTE.—*Le* is similarly used, where no pronoun is required in English, to refer to the idea contained in a preceding verb or clause ; e.g. *je viendrai si mon père me le permet, I shall come if my father allows me (i.e. allows me to come).*

§ 130. **En**.—The word **en**, originally an adverb (L. *inde*), is used as an invariable conjunctive genitive with a variety of meanings, of which the commonest are *of it, of that, of them, some of it, some, any*. It is most frequently employed, in accordance with a logical completeness of statement which is characteristic of the language, to represent a preceding substantive which is unrepresented in English. For instance, in—

Combien de pommes avez-vous ? J'en ai trois—
How many apples have you ? I have three—

the word **en** is as essential a part of the French sentence as any other word, although it has no equivalent in the English translation ; and it must therefore be used whenever a substantive is understood after a word or number, whether substantive, adjective, or adverb (*beaucoup*, etc.).

Si vous avez de l'argent, donnez-lui-en.
If you have any money, give him some.
Permettez-moi de vous offrir du thé. Merci, j'en ai.
Allow me to offer you some tea. I have some, thank you.

§ 131. **Y**.—This word, like **en**, was originally an adverb (L. *ibi*). It is an invariable dative, and usually stands instead of the datives **lui, leur**, in referring to animals and things.

J'ai reçu votre lettre ; j'y répondrai.
I have received your letter ; I shall answer it.
Quant à la raison que vous alléguez, je m'y rends.
As to the reason you allege, I yield to it.

§ 132. **En** and **y** follow all other personal pronouns, and **en** follows **y**.

Vous lui en donnerez, n'est-ce pas ?
You will give him some, will you not ?
Nous allons nous y appliquer.
We are going to apply ourselves to it.

§ 133. Both **en** and **y** are also used in their original adverbial sense.

Connaissez-vous Paris ? J'en viens.
Do you know Paris ? I come thence.
Je n'y resterai pas longtemps.
I shall not stop there long.

EXERCISE 26.

A.—1. Êtes-vous la sœur de mon ami ? Oui, je la suis. 2. Est-ce que vous êtes les élèves que j'attends ? Nous les sommes. 3. Avez-vous de l'argent ? Je n'en ai pas sur moi. 4. Il emboucha son instrument et en tira des sons discordants. 5. J'aime beaucoup les Pyrénées ; j'y passe deux mois par an. 6. Plus on étudie Shakespeare, plus on y trouve de beautés. 7. Fûtes-vous les banquiers de mon père ? Nous les fûmes. 8. Seront-ils fidèles à leur engagement ? Ils le seront. 9. Nourri dans le palais, j'en connais (*know*) les passages secrets. 10. La langue anglaise est simple ; pourquoi la prononciation en est-elle si difficile ?

B.—1. The insurgents seized the position and intrenched themselves there. 2. Have you been to London ? I arrive thence. 3. You have good tobacco ; will you give me some ? 4. I should have bought a melon, if there had been any at the market. 5. Madam, are you not a governess ? Yes, I am. 6. Are you the mother of this child ? I am. 7. If I have succeeded in this enterprise, I owe (*dois*) it to your counsels. 8. Since they have seen (*vu*) Paris, they are always speaking of it. 9. Speak to me of our village ; I have no news of it. 10. This horse is vicious ; do not approach him.

LESSON 27.—DISJUNCTIVE PERSONAL PRONOUNS.

§ 134. The disjunctive pronouns have only one form for the nominative and accusative ; the dative is formed by prefixing à.

Singular.		Plural.
First Person (both genders)	moi, I, me.	nous, we, us.
Second " "	toi, thou, thee.	vous, ye, you.
Third " (Masc.)	lui, he, him.	eux, they, them.
" " (Fem.)	elle, she, her.	elles, they, them.

§ 135. A disjunctive personal pronoun may stand alone in answer to a question.

Qui va là ? Moi.

Who is there ? I.

§ 136. A disjunctive personal pronoun is used as the second term of a comparison.

Nous sommes plus âgés qu'eux.

We are older than they.

§ 137. A disjunctive personal pronoun stands as the direct object of a transitive verb accompanied by *ne . . . que*.

Je n'aime qu'elle.
I love none but her.

§ 138. Disjunctive personal pronouns are used when there are two or more subjects, objects or indirect objects to the same verb, one or more of such subjects or objects being pronouns.

Lui et elle sont arrivés.
He and she have arrived.

§ 139. A disjunctive personal pronoun is used in exclamations.

Moi ! trahir mon meilleur ami !
I, betray my best friend !

§ 140. A disjunctive personal pronoun is used as the antecedent to a relative pronoun.

Moi, qui suis innocent, serai condamné.
I, who am innocent, shall be condemned.

§ 141. A disjunctive personal pronoun may precede the corresponding conjunctive pronoun for the sake of emphasis.

Elle ne vous aime pas ; et moi, je vous hais.
She does not like you, and I hate you.

§ 142. A disjunctive personal pronoun is used after a preposition.

À qui parlez-vous ? À eux.
To whom are you speaking ? To them.

§ 143. A disjunctive personal pronoun may stand as the complement of the impersonal *c'est, ce sont*.

Est-ce toi, mon cher ?	Ce sont eux.
<i>Is it you, my dear fellow ?</i>	<i>It is they.</i>

§ 144. The disjunctive personal pronouns are used to form the emphatic personal pronouns.

	Singular.	Plural.
First Person	moi-même, <i>myself</i> .	nous-mêmes, <i>ourselves</i> .
Second "	{ toi-même, <i>thyself</i> . vous-même, <i>yourself</i> . }	vous-mêmes, <i>yourselves</i> .
Third "	{ lui-même, <i>himself</i> . elle-même, <i>herself</i> . }	eux-mêmes elles-mêmes } <i>themselves</i> .

Je l'ai fait moi-même.

I did it myself.

EXERCISE 27.

A.—1. Qui demandez-vous? Monsieur Jean. C'est moi. 2. Est-ce à lui-même que vous désirez parler? 3. C'est d'elle que je parle et non de lui. 4. Nous trouverons notre chemin sans eux. 5. Vous ressemblez à votre frère, mais vous êtes moins grand que lui. 6. Dorénavant, je n'écouterai que toi, mon cher ami. 7. "Chacun pour soi," criaient les fuyards. 8. Ces fruits sont pour lui et ces livres pour toi. 9. Nous allons chez eux cet après-midi. Voulez-vous venir avec nous? 10. "Au secours! À moi!" s'écria-t-il.

B.—1. They only do (*font*) harm to themselves. 2. George is more robust than thou, but thou art more active than he. 3. "Thou also, Brutus!" groaned Cæsar, struck by the conspirators. 4. He! he has only what he deserves. 5. I who speak to you have seen (*vu*) him and spoken to him. 6. You have told (*dit*) me so (*le*) yourself. 7. As for him, he is still worse (*plus mauvais*) than she. 8. It was not he that I was asking for, but thou. 9. Whoever speaks too much of himself is wearisome. 10. He and I will receive them.

LESSON 28.—THE NUMERALS.

CARDINALS AND ORDINALS.

§ 145. The cardinals and ordinals are given in the following tables:—

	CARDINALS.	ORDINALS.
1	un (masc.), une (fem.)	premier (masc.), première (fem.)
2	deux	{ second (masc.), seconde (fem.) deuxième *
3	trois	troisième
4	quatre	quatrième
5	cinq	cinquième
6	six	sixième <i>or</i> sixième †
7	sept	septième
8	huit	huitième
9	neuf	neuvième
10	dix	dixième <i>or</i> dixième
11	onze	onzième
12	douze	douzième
13	treize	treizième
14	quatorze	quatorzième
15	quinze	quinzième
16	seize	seizième
17	dix-sept	dix-septième
18	dix-huit	dix-huitième
19	dix-neuf	dix-neuvième
20	vingt	vingtième
21	vingt et un	vingt et unième
22	vingt-deux	vingt-deuxième
23	vingt-trois	vingt-troisième
24	vingt-quatre	vingt-quatrième
25	vingt-cinq	vingt-cinquième
26	vingt-six	vingt-sixième
27	vingt-sept	vingt-septième
28	vingt-huit	vingt-huitième
29	vingt-neuf	vingt-neuvième

* Second denotes *second* of two; deuxième, *second* among a larger number.

† To be distinguished from *seizième*.

	CARDINALS.	ORDINALS.
30	trente	trentième
31	trente et un	trente et unième
32	trente-deux	trente-deuxième
40	quarante	quarantième
41	quarante et un	quarante et unième
42	quarante-deux	quarante-deuxième
50	cinquante	cinquantième
51	cinquante et un	cinquante et unième
52	cinquante-deux	cinquante-deuxième
60	soixante	soixantième
61	{soixante et un	soixante et unième
	{soixante-un	soixante-unième
62	soixante-deux	soixante-deuxième
70	soixante-dix	soixante-dixième
71	{soixante et onze	soixante et onzième
	{soixante-onze	soixante-onzième
72	soixante-douze	soixante-douzième
73	soixante-treize	soixante-treizième
74	soixante-quatorze	soixante-quatorzième
75	soixante-quinze	soixante-quinzième
76	soixante-seize	soixante-seizième
77	soixante-dix-sept	soixante-dix-septième
78	soixante-dix-huit	soixante-dix-huitième
79	soixante-dix-neuf	soixante-dix-neuvième
80	quatre-vingts	quatre-vingtième
81	quatre-vingt-un	quatre-vingt-unième
82	quatre-vingt-deux	quatre-vingt-deuxième
90	quatre-vingt-dix	quatre-vingt-dixième
91	quatre-vingt-onze	quatre-vingt-onzième
92	quatre-vingt-douze	quatre-vingt-douzième
99	quatre-vingt-dix-neuf	quatre-vingt-dix-neuvième
100	cent	centième
101	cent un	cent unième
102	cent deux	cent deuxième
200	deux cents	deux centième
300	trois cents	trois centième
500	cinq cents	cinq centième
580	cinq cent quatre-vingts	cinq cent quatre-vingtième
586	cinq cent quatre-vingt-six	cinq cent quatre-vingt-sixième
1000	mille	millième
2000	deux mille	deux millième
10,000	dix mille	dix millième

§ 146. **Vingt** and **cent** take the sign of the plural when they are multiplied, but not followed, by another number.

Quatre-vingts soldats.

**80 soldiers.*

Huit cents hommes.

800 men.

Quatre-vingt-dix soldats.

90 soldiers.

Huit cent une femmes.

801 women.

Obs. When **vingt** and **cent** are used in the place of ordinals (§ 151) they have no final **-s**.

§ 147. **Cent** and **mille** are not preceded by the indefinite article **un**, *a*.

Cent matelots.

A hundred sailors.

Mille chevaux.

A thousand horses.

§ 148. The numeral **mille**, *thousand*, does not take the sign of the plural; **milles** is the plural of the substantive **un mille**, *a mile*.

Dix mille hommes.

Ten thousand men.

Il a fait dix milles à pied.

He has walked ten miles.

§ 149. **Mil** (L. *mille*) is used instead of **mille** (L. *milia*) in dates reckoned from the Christian era later than 1000 A.D.

L'an mil huit cent.

The year 1800.

L'an trois mille du monde.

The year of the world 3000.

§ 150. **Et**, *and*, is not used between the different components of a number, except in **vingt et un**, **trente et un**, **quarante et un**, **cinquante et un**, **soixante et un**, **soixante et onze**. Hyphens are used in other compound cardinals under 100.

quatre-vingt-trois, 83.

cent trente et un, 131.

cinq mille huit cent soixante-dix-sept, 5877.

EXERCISE 28.

A.—1. Le détachement se composait de quatre-vingts hommes d'élite. 2. La garnison, forte de trois cent soixante-dix-huit hommes, résista à l'attaque. 3. On a vendu à la foire trois cents bœufs et deux mille moutons. 4. N'avez-vous pas payé cette maison vingt et un mille francs? 5. Trois milles d'Italie font (*make*) une lieue de France. 6. Le nombre neuf cent quatre-vingt-dix-neuf s'écrit (*is written*) avec trois neuf. 7. L'an du Christ mil huit cent quatre-vingt-dix-sept correspond à l'année mahométane mille trois cent quinze. 8. Ce dictionnaire m'a coûté vingt et un francs soixante-quinze centimes. 9. En mil huit cent soixante et onze la France paya cinq milliards de francs à l'Allemagne. 10. La population de la France est de trente-huit millions d'habitants.

B.—1. Pithiviers is (at) 120 metres above the level of the sea. 2. Formerly the French counted by scores; they said (*disaient*) four score, six score, seven score. 3. It is about 12,000 miles from London to Sydney. 4. Victor Hugo died (*est mort*) in 1885, at the age of (*âgé de*) 83 years. 5. The Sultan's army is composed of 745,000 men. 6. Charlemagne was crowned Emperor of the West [in] the year 800. 7. You will find this information in your grammar, page 80. 8. At Maragran 120 French repulsed 12,000 Arabs. 9. Algiers was conquered (*conquis*) in 1830. 10. The Gauls invaded Italy [in] the year 3416 of the creation (*du monde*).

LESSON 29.—THE NUMERALS (*continued*).

§ 151. The ordinal numbers, with the exception of **premier**, *first*, and **second**, the alternative for **deuxième**, *second*, are formed by adding **-ième** to the cardinals, final **-e** mute being elided; *e.g.* **quatre**, **quatr-ième**; **u** is inserted after **q** in **cinq-u-ième**, and **f** is softened to **v** in **neuv-ième**.

§ 152. **Unième** and **deuxième** (never **premier** and **second**) are used in compound ordinals.

Cet élève est le premier de sa classe, mais son frère est le vingt et unième.

This boy is first in his class, but his brother is twenty-first.

§ 153. **Et**, *and*, is used between the components of an ordinal only if it is used in the corresponding cardinal (§ 150); hyphens are used where **et** is not used in all compound ordinals under 100th.

§ 154. Cardinal numbers are used instead of ordinals, always with the exception of **premier**, *first*, in the following cases:—

(a) In the titles of sovereigns.

Guillaume III., *i.e.* **Guillaume trois**, *William the Third*.

Henri VIII., *i.e.* **Henri huit**, *Henry the Eighth*.

Charles I., *i.e.* **Charles premier**, *Charles the First*.

NOTE.—The old form **quint** survives in the two titles **Charles-Quint**, *Charles V.* (the Emperor), and **Sixte-Quint**, *Pope Sixtus V.*

(b) In giving the number of a volume, chapter, page, or verse.

Chapitre quatre-vingt.

Page vingt et un.

** The eightieth chapter.*

The twenty-first page.

Obs. The use of the ordinal is equally correct in the expressions included under (b); e.g. **la quatre-vingtième page, le vingtième chapitre.**

(c) In mentioning the year (cp. § 149) or the days of the month (§ 156).

NOTE.—In compound cardinals used as ordinals **un** is invariable. See (b) above, second example.

EXPRESSIONS INVOLVING THE USE OF NUMERALS.

(i.) DATE.

§ 155. The following are the French names for the months and for the days of the week; they are all masculine substantives, and are not written with an initial capital letter:—

janvier, January.

novembre, November.

février, February.

décembre, December.

mars, March.

avril, April.

dimanche, Sunday.

mai, May.

lundi, Monday.

juin, June.

mardi, Tuesday.

juillet, July.

mercredi, Wednesday.

août, August.

jeudi, Thursday.

septembre, September.

vendredi, Friday.

octobre, October.

samedi, Saturday.

§ 156. In expressing a date (a) no preposition is used in French corresponding to the English *on*; (b) the day of the month is expressed by *premier* or a cardinal numeral, preceded by *le*, and followed by the name of the month without a preposition.

Le premier août.

Le onze juillet (§ 8, *Obs.*).

The first of August.

The eleventh of July.

Le trente et un janvier.

Elle partira lundi.

The thirty-first of January.

She will start on Monday.

Il mourut le quinze juin mil huit cent (or dix-huit cent) quatre-vingt-neuf.

He died on the fifteenth of June, 1889.

(ii) TIME OF DAY.

§ 157. The following examples show the French method of stating the hour. The word *minutes*, *minutes*, may be omitted, as in English :—

Quelle heure est-il ?	<i>What o'clock is it ?</i>
Il est une heure,	<i>It is one o'clock.</i>
Il est midi,	<i>It is twelve o'clock (noon).</i>
Il est minuit,	<i>It is twelve o'clock (midnight).</i>
Il est deux heures et demie,	<i>It is half-past two.</i>
Il est midi et (un) quart,	<i>It is a quarter-past twelve.</i>
Il est midi moins un quart,	<i>It is a quarter to twelve.</i>
Il est une heure cinq (minutes),	<i>It is five minutes past one.</i>
Il est dix heures vingt-cinq (minutes),	<i>It is five-and-twenty past ten.</i>

Le train partira à midi moins vingt (minutes).

The train will leave at twenty (minutes) to twelve.

NOTE.—The abbreviation *m.* (*matin*, *morning*) is used for *a.m.*, and *s.* (*soir*, *evening*) for *p.m.*

(iii) AGE.

§ 158. The verb *avoir*, *to have*, is used to express age.

Quel âge avez-vous ?	<i>J'ai vingt et un ans.</i>
<i>How old are you ?</i>	<i>I am twenty-one.</i>

EXERCISE 29.

A.—1. Le premier qui vit (*saw*) un chameau, s'enfuit (*fled*) à cet objet nouveau ; le second s'approcha ; le troisième osa faire un licou pour le dromadaire. 2. Nous demeurions à New-York dans la vingt et unième maison de la onzième avenue. 3. Vous n'êtes pas le cinquième, vous êtes le neuvième. 4. Napoléon premier était l'oncle de Napoléon trois. 5. Si vous n'êtes pas arrivé à deux heures et quart, je partirai. 6. Il était exactement trois heures moins vingt-cinq quand on frappa à ma porte. 7. J'ai eu trente-huit ans le deux septembre dernier. 8. César conquiert (*conquered*) la Gaule l'an quarante avant Jésus-Christ. 9. Nous lisons les versets douze et quinze, chapitre seize de l'évangile de Saint Jean. 10. J'ai reçu le vingt et un juin votre lettre du dix-sept mai.

B.—1. Francis I. was the rival of Charles V. 2. Pope Pius IX. died on the 7th of February, 1878. 3. The French won the battle of Austerlitz on the 2nd of December, 1805. 4. The third act of this drama is more beautiful than the fifth. 5. You will find the definition of the participle [on] page 22, chapter iii. 6. The first bell (*coup de cloche*) rings at ten to eight. 7. Wait for me till five

minutes past nine. 8. I should wish to see you next Thursday, the 17th inst. 9. It was half-past one in (*of*) the morning when I finished my translation. 10. I shall leave by the 11.20 train (*the train of* 11.20).

LESSON 30.—COMPARISON.

§ 159. The comparative of adjectives is formed by prefixing the adverb plus, *more*, to the positive.

	Singular.	Plural.	
Masc.	plus joli	plus jolis	} <i>prettier</i>
Fem.	plus jolie	plus jolies	

Obs. This is what is generally understood by the comparative of an adjective, but it is, strictly speaking, the comparative of superiority.

§ 160. Besides the comparative of superiority, there are the comparative of inferiority, and the comparative of equality, formed by prefixing the adverbs *moins*, *less*, and *aussi*, *as*, respectively.

	Singular.	Plural.	
Masc.	moins joli	moins jolis	} <i>less pretty</i>
Fem.	moins jolie	moins jolies	
Masc.	aussi joli	aussi jolis	} <i>as pretty</i>
Fem.	aussi jolie	aussi jolies	

§ 161. The following are examples of (*a*) the comparative of superiority, (*b*) the comparative of inferiority, (*c*) the comparative of equality, *than* or *as* being in each case rendered by *que* :—

(*a*) Charles est plus obéissant que Pierre.

Charles is more obedient than Peter.

(*b*) L'or est moins dur que l'argent.

Gold is less hard than silver.

(*c*) Il est aussi noir qu'un nègre.

He is as black as a negro.

NOTE.—*Than* is only translated by *que* when *plus* and *moins* are used to express a comparison: when they merely indicate excess of quantity or the reverse, *than* must be rendered by *de*; *e.g.*—

Un éléphant peut porter plus que six chevaux.

An elephant can carry more than six horses (can carry).

But,

Un éléphant peut porter plus de six hommes.

An elephant can carry more than six men (on its back).

§ 162. In negative sentences **aussi** may be replaced by **si**.

Il n'est pas si grand que son frère.

He is not so tall as his brother.

Obs. This is obviously another way of expressing the comparative of inferiority.

§ 163. The superlative of superiority and the superlative of inferiority are formed by prefixing the definite article to the comparative of superiority and the comparative of inferiority respectively.

	Singular.	Plural.	
Masc.	le plus joli	les plus jolis	} <i>the prettiest</i>
Fem.	la plus jolie	les plus jolies	
Masc.	le moins joli	les moins jolis	} <i>the least pretty</i>
Fem.	la moins jolie	les moins jolies	

Ces élèves sont les plus forts de l'école.

These pupils are the ablest in the school.

Les hommes les moins habiles sont souvent les plus arrogants.

The least able men are often the most presumptuous.

§ 164. Adverbs are compared in the same way as adjectives, except that the superlative of an adverb is preceded always by the article **le** (invariable).

Ils ont agi plus courageusement que vous.

They have acted more courageously than you.

C'est elle qui a agi le plus courageusement.

It is she who has acted most courageously.

§ 165. Three adjectives, with their corresponding adverbs, have an irregular comparative.

Positive.	Comparative.	Superlative.
bon, good	meilleur	le meilleur
mauvais, bad	pire or plus mauvais	le pire or le plus mauvais
petit, little	moindre or plus petit	le moindre or le plus petit
bien, well	mieux	le mieux
mal, badly	pis or plus mal	le pis or le plus mal
peu, little	moins	le moins

EXERCISE 30.

A.—1. Il était plus de six heures quand nous arrivâmes à Rouen.
 2. Votre frère n'est-il pas aussi grand que vous? 3. Les montagnes de l'Europe ne sont pas si hautes que celles de l'Asie. 4. Napoléon a été le plus grand capitaine des temps modernes. 5. C'est la femme la plus excentrique de la ville. 6. Il travaille plus diligemment que votre frère. 7. J'avais un meilleur professeur à Paris qu'à Rome. 8. Les aciers anglais sont reconnus (*recognised as*) les meilleurs. 9. La paresse est le pire défaut. 10. La fourmi n'est pas prêteuse, c'est là (*that is*) son moindre défaut.

B.—1. This overcoat is warmer than this cloak. 2. Your frock-coat is heavier than mine. 3. The Eiffel Tower is higher than the pyramids of Egypt. 4. The rhinoceros is less large than the elephant. 5. The population of Belgium is as dense as that of England. 6. Paris is less extensive than London. 7. It is you who have answered best. 8. They listened with attention [to] his least words. 9. He is a rascal of the worst kind. 10. Your pronunciation is worse than his.

LESSON 31.—INDEFINITE ADJECTIVES.

§ 166. The following words can be used as indefinite adjectives only:—

Singular.		Plural.		
Masc.	Fem.	Masc.	Fem.	
certain	certaine	certain	certaines	{ <i>certain</i> <i>some</i>
	chaque			{ <i>each</i> <i>every</i>
maint	mainte	maints	maintes	<i>many a</i>
	même		mêmes	<i>self, same</i>
	quelque		quelques	<i>some, a few</i>
quel...que	quelle...que	quels...que	quelles...que	<i>whatever</i>
	quelconque		quelconques	{ <i>any . . .</i> <i>whatever</i>

Un certain homme avait deux fils.

A certain man had two sons.

Il revient chaque soir.

He returns every evening.

Je l'ai vu mainte(s) fois.

I have seen him many a time.

Le même sort nous attend.

The same fate awaits us.

Nous avons quelques heures à attendre.

We have some hours to wait.

*Quelle que soit son intention.

Whatever his intention may be.

Prenez deux points quelconques.

Take any two points.

EXERCISE 31.

A.—1. A mainte reprise je l'ai averti qu'il se trompait. 2. Dans certaines contrées on n'allume jamais de feu que pour cuire les aliments. 3. Quelques amis se réunissent chaque soir chez moi. 4. J'ai l'intention d'aller vous voir dans quelques jours. 5. Quels que soient les avantages de la paix, quelque guerre éclate toujours. 6. Chaque métier a ses désavantages. 7. N'est-ce pas le même conte que vous nous avez déjà raconté? 8. Avec des matériaux quelconques l'industriel naufragé se bâtit une habitation. 9. Le fabuliste raconte qu'un certain rat se retira autrefois dans un fromage. 10. Ils enlevèrent successivement chaque position.

B.—1. For some months my health has been failing (*s'altère*) rapidly. 2. Whatever may be the integrity of your intentions, you will be suspected. 3. Whoever he may be, the culprit will be punished. 4. Give him any subject; he will treat it marvellously. 5. Each soldier received his share of the plunder. 6. They are the same soldiers who fought at Eylau and at Friedland. 7. The old soldiers themselves were struck with (*de*) terror. 8. Many a plant whose fruit is a poison contains its antidote in its root. 9. Certain philosophers of antiquity taught the immortality of the soul. 10. He brought us a certain very amusing story.

LESSON 32.—INDEFINITE ADJECTIVES AND PRONOUNS.

§ 167. The following words can be used either as indefinite adjectives or as indefinite pronouns:—

Singular.		Plural.		
Masc.	Fem.	Masc.	Fem.	
aucun	aucune	aucuns	aucunes	
autre		autres		{ <i>any, no,</i>
				{ <i>none</i>
				<i>other</i>
l'un et	l'une et	les uns et	les unes et	} <i>both</i>
l'a r	l'a r	a r	a r	

* Quel . . . que is always followed by the subjunctive.

Singular.		Plural.		
Masc.	Fem.	Masc.	Fem.	
l'un ou	l'une ou	les uns ou	les unes ou	} <i>either</i>
l'autre	l'autre	les autres	les autres	
ni l'un ni	ni l'une ni	ni les uns ni	ni les unes ni	} <i>neither</i>
l'autre	l'autre	les autres	les autres	
nul	nulle	nuls	nulles	<i>no, none</i>
		plusieurs		<i>several</i>
tel	telle	tels	telles	<i>such</i>
tout	toute	tous	toutes	<i>all every</i>

***Aucun (or nul) espoir ne nous reste.**

No hope is left to us.

***Je n'ai vu aucun de vos amis.**

I have seen none of your friends.

Prenez l'autre chemin.

Take the other road.

Les autres sont partis.

The others are gone.

Ni l'une ni l'autre maison n'est à vendre.

Neither house is for sale.

Ni l'un ni l'autre n'a raison.

Neither is right.

Quant aux royalistes et aux républicains, je ne sympathise ni avec les uns ni les autres.

As for the royalists and republicans I sympathize with neither.

Plusieurs ont été tués.

Many have been killed.

Plusieurs soldats ont été tués.

Many soldiers have been killed.

Telle fut sa fin.

Such was his end.

Tel qui rit vendredi dimanche pleurera.

He who laughs on Friday will weep on Sunday.

Toute la terre est habitée.

The whole earth is inhabited.

Tous ont péché.

All have sinned.

EXERCISE 32.

A.—1. Comment conservez-vous de telles illusions? 2. Tout homme a dans son âme un grain de vanité. 3. N'êtes-vous pas bien connu (*known*) de toute la ville? 4. Les bavards et les pédants sont désagréables; je n'aime ni les uns ni les autres. 5. On ne lui accordera nulle indemnité. 6. "Tel qui rit (*laughs*) le vendredi

* **Aucun** and **nul** when used with a verb require to be accompanied by the negative particle **ne**.

pleurera dimanche ou lundi," dit (*says*) un vieux proverbe. 7. Nul n'est content de son sort. 8. Plusieurs ont été découverts (*discovered*) qui s'imaginaient être bien cachés. 9. N'avez-vous aucun ami dans ce pays? 10. J'ai dansé avec l'une et l'autre de vos cousines.

B.—1. Everything seemed favourable to me in this enterprise. 2. On (*dans*) every occasion he consulted all his friends. 3. These two books are equally good; give me one or the other. 4. Neither dress pleases (*plait*) me. 5. No funeral (*plur.*) was ever so sad. 6. In vain she applied to all her friends; none answered her. 7. Among the victims were (*found themselves*) several ladies. 8. Does not such a calamity sadden you? 9. It is rightly said: "Like master, like man." 10. The toad and the owl are useful; let us respect both.

LESSON 33.—INDEFINITE PRONOUNS.

§ 168. The following words are used as indefinite pronouns only. They may be divided into variable and invariable:—

§ 169. 1. VARIABLE INDEFINITE PRONOUNS.

Singular.			Plural.	
Masc.	Fem.		Masc.	Fem.
chacun	chacune	<i>each one</i>		
l'un	l'une	<i>the one</i>	les uns	les unes
l'un l'autre	l'une l'autre	<i>one another</i>	les uns les autres	les unes les autres
quelqu'un	quelqu'une	<i>some one</i>	quelques-uns	quelques-unes

Remettez ces chaises, chacune à sa place.

Put each of these chairs in its place.

L'une d'elles est brisée.

One of them is broken.

Ces deux hommes se haïssent l'un l'autre.

These two men hate each other.

Tous ces gens se haïssent les uns les autres.

All these people hate one another.

Achetez quelques-unes de ces gravures.

Buy some of these engravings.

§ 170. 2. INVARIABLE INDEFINITE PRONOUNS.

autrui (never nominative),

quelque chose, *something**others, other people.** on, l'on, *one, people, they.*quiconque, *whoever.*personne, *any one, no one.*rien, *anything, nothing.*

Ne prends pas les biens d'autrui.

Do not take other people's property.

On trouve des diamants en Afrique.

Diamonds are found in Africa.

Je viendrai si l'on * m'appelle.

I shall come if I am called.

Personne † n'est assez sot pour le croire

Nobody is so foolish as to believe him.

Qui vous l'a dit? Personne.

Who told you so? No one.

Y a-t-il personne d'assez courageux?

Is there anybody courageous enough?

J'ai appris quelque chose ‡ de fâcheux.

I have learnt something annoying.

Quiconque flatte son maître le trahit.

Whoever flatters his master betrays him.

Qui ne risque rien, n'a rien.

Nothing venture, nothing have.

Qu'avez-vous? Rien.

What is the matter with you? Nothing.

Y a-t-il rien de plus beau?

Is there anything more beautiful?

EXERCISE 33.

A.—1. Est-il rien de plus noble que la charité? 2. Personne n'est-il venu (*come*)? Si, la personne que vous attendiez est arrivée. 3. "Où transportera-t-on les blessés?" demandèrent les soldats. 4. "Qu'on les achève!" répondit le brutal vainqueur. 5. Quelque accident arrivera, si l'on n'est pas plus prudent. 6. "Aimez-vous les uns les autres," dit (*said*) le Sauveur à ses disciples.

* On is often replaced by l'on after *et, ou, où, que, si*, for the sake of euphony.

† The masculine pronoun *personne* must be distinguished from the feminine substantive *une personne*, *a person*.

‡ The substantive *chose* is feminine, but the indefinite pronoun *quelque chose* is masculine, or, rather, neuter.

7. De tous les secrets de la nature, quelques-uns seulement nous sont connus (*known*). 8. Le juge de la fable donna une écaille de l'huître à chacun des plaideurs. 9. J'ai vu (*seen*) vos deux amis; l'un et l'autre sont en bonne santé. 10. Ces perles ont coûté cent francs chacune.

B.—1. With work and perseverance nothing is impossible. 2. He is an idler, he will never get on (*will arrive at nothing*). 3. There is no degree in honesty; one is honest or not honest. 4. If one listened to this man, one would repent of it. 5. They have sent presents to each other. 6. In the rout the fugitives wounded each other. 7. This work must be finished before noon. 8. There are some good pears; buy a few of them. 9. Whoever steals (*fut.*) the property of others will be hanged. 10. Each of his speeches is a master-piece.

LESSON 34.—THE SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

§ 171. The subjunctive is used in a subordinate clause depending on a verb expressing wish or command.

J'exige qu'il obéisse.

I require him to obey.

J'ai exigé qu'il obéît.

I required him to obey.

Such verbs are :—

aimer, to like.

aimer mieux, to prefer.

commander, to order.

défendre, to forbid.

désirer, to wish.

empêcher, to prevent.

etc.

exiger, to require (§ 274).

ordonner, to order.

permettre, to allow.

préférer, to prefer (§ 266).

souhaiter, to wish.

vouloir, to wish (§ 307).

etc.

Obs. The construction of the accusative and infinitive, so common in English and Latin, is replaced in French by the conjunction **que** and a subordinate clause.

EXERCISE 34.

A.—1. L'Europe ne permettra pas que les Turcs anéantissent les Grecs. 2. La prudence commande que nous restions tranquilles. 3. Le bon roi ne voulait pas que la victoire coûtât trop de sang. 4. Le bouillant soldat préférerait que le combat commençât immédiatement. 5. L'hygiène défend que l'on se baigne après le repas. 6. N'empêchez-vous pas qu'il leur donne un si mauvais exemple? 7. Le soin de votre santé exige que vous vous couchiez et que vous vous leviez de bonne heure. 8. Le maître voulait que les élèves gardassent le silence. 9. La loi défendait que le doge quittât le territoire de Venise. 10. Le général ordonna qu'on épargnât les vaincus (*vanquished*).

B.—1. Your interests require you to be present at the meeting. 2. I sincerely wish that you may succeed. 3. Charity orders that we should help the unhappy. 4. I prefer that we should speak of another subject. 5. The king ordered the prisoners to be set at liberty (*that one should give back liberty to the prisoners*). 6. Will the master allow you to give me (an) advice? 7. I should prefer their sending me what they owe me. 8. The Spartan mothers preferred that their sons should lose their lives (*sing.*) rather than (*plutôt que de*) flee. 9. Caligula wished that the Roman people had only one head in order to strike it down at (*de*) one blow. 10. I am much afraid that they will not finish the Panama canal.

LESSON 35.—THE SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

(continued).

§ 172. The subjunctive is used in a subordinate clause depending on a verb expressing emotion of any kind.

Je m'étonne que vous ne l'ayez pas vu.

I am surprised that you have not seen him.

Nous avions peur qu'il ne nous rencontrât.

We were afraid he might meet us.

Such verbs are:—

craindre, to fear (§ 329).

se plaindre, to complain (§ 329).

s'étonner, to be astonished.

regretter, to regret.

and the verbs *avoir* and *être* followed by a complement denoting emotion, *e.g.* *avoir honte, peur, to be ashamed, afraid; être charmé, content, indigné, désolé, surpris, to be delighted, pleased, indignant, distressed, surprised.*

NOTE 1.—Words denoting *fear*, when used affirmatively, require *ne* (cp. Lat. *ne, lest*) with the following subjunctive.

NOTE 2.—The present subjunctive is often used as a future, *e.g.* *j'ai peur qu'il ne soit fâché, I am afraid he will be vexed.*

EXERCISE 35.

A.—1. Je craindrais que vous n'arrivassiez trop tard. 2. Si vous vous moquez d'autrui, vous aurez à craindre qu'on ne se moque de vous. 3. Ils s'étonnèrent que nous ne les attendissions pas. 4. Se plaindront-ils que nous leur donnions trop de travail? 5. Je regrette qu'il n'ait pas suivi (*followed*) votre avis. 6. Je suis surpris que vous m'adressiez de tels reproches. 7. Je serais désolé qu'il vous arrivât malheur. 8. Ils seront charmés que vous pensiez à eux. 9. N'avez-vous pas été indigné qu'elles aient si mal accueilli votre offre? 10. Avez-vous honte qu'il soit avec vous?

B.—1. He was surprised that you did not receive him. 2. We regret that they have not been introduced to you. 3. I am much afraid that you are mistaken. 4. You must fear lest you should be thought impertinent. 5. He will fear that his fatherland may be enslaved. 6. We begged that his life might be spared. 7. I pray God to forgive you. 8. I should be sorry for you to deprive yourself of your walk. 9. The captive implored that his bonds might be loosened. 10. I beg that I may be allowed a little rest.

LESSON 36.—THE SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD (continued).

§ 173. The subjunctive is used in a subordinate clause depending on a verb expressing uncertainty.

Je doute qu'ils soient ici.

I doubt their being here.

Il nie que cela soit vrai.

He denies that that is true.

Je n'ai jamais dit qu'il fût lâche.

I never said that he was a coward.

Pensez-vous qu'il l'ait fait ?

Do you think he has done so ?

Such verbs are :—

douter, to doubt.

nier, to deny.

and verbs of saying and thinking used negatively or interrogatively.

EXERCISE 36.

A.—1. Est-ce que vous doutez qu'il réussisse ? 2. Il n'est pas certain que les anciens aient surpassé les modernes dans les beaux-arts. 3. Nous ne nions pas que vous soyez l'auteur de cet ouvrage. 4. Que pensez-vous qu'il réponde à cette calomnie ? 5. Croiriez-vous qu'il fût si lâche ? 6. Es-tu d'avis que nous essayions cette tâche ? 7. Je ne crois (*think*) pas sage que nous leur prêtions de l'argent. 8. Nous ne pensons pas que l'on remplace les chemins de fer par un autre moyen de locomotion. 9. S'il arrivait qu'on vous offrît deux mille francs de (*for*) ce cheval, vous ne devriez pas refuser. 10. Mérite-t-il vraiment qu'on s'intéresse à lui ?

B.—1. I do not say (*dis*) that you are wrong. 2. Do you think that the grapes (*sing.*) will ripen this summer ? 3. I doubt whether he will grant you the reparation which he owes (*doit*) you. 4. It is not certain that our friends are at home. 5. If it happened that you have been mistaken I should not be surprised. 6. I was apprehensive lest you should be ill. 7. I should not have supposed that he would have been the first. 8. We did not know that you had started. 9. No one has told (*dit*) us that you speak English. 10. If you have an enemy who is in (the) need, help (*secourez*) him.

LESSON 37.—THE SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

(continued).

§ 174. The subjunctive is used in a subordinate clause introduced by any of the following impersonal verbs:—

il faut (§ 309), il est nécessaire,	} <i>it is necessary.</i>	il est possible, il se peut (§ 306),	} <i>it is possible.</i>
il importe, il est important,	} <i>it is important.</i>	il semble, <i>it seems.</i> il est temps, <i>it is time.</i>	
il est juste, <i>it is just.</i>		il vaut mieux (§ 308), <i>it is better.</i>	

Il est juste qu'il soit récompensé.

It is right that he should be rewarded.

Il vaut mieux qu'il se rende.

It is better that he should surrender.

Obs. The use of the subjunctive with these impersonal verbs falls in most cases under one or other of the first three rules given above (§§ 171-3).

EXERCISE 37.

A.—1. Il faut que tu t'accoutumes à vaincre tes passions. 2. Il sera nécessaire que vous prépariez sérieusement cet examen. 3. Il est possible qu'il se trompe. 4. Il convient (*is fitting*) que vous réfléchissiez avant de répondre. 5. Il vaudra (*will be*) mieux que vous m'attendiez. 6. Il est juste que vous acceptiez la récompense de votre dévouement. 7. On craint (*fears*) que la tempête n'ait causé beaucoup de naufrages. 8. Il ne faudrait pas que vous vous imaginassiez être parfaits. 9. S'il arrive que vous commettiez une impolitesse, excusez-vous-en. 10. Il est juste que les coupables soient punis.

B.—1. It is possible that I am wrong, but I am not convinced of it. 2. Is it possible that you are so obstinate? 3. Before undertaking (*avant d'entreprendre*) this expedition, it is well that the troops should be prepared for it (*y*). 4. It was time for you to arrive. 5. It seems that you are walking with difficulty. 6. It will be better for you to speak to him (the) first. 7. Is it possible that you do not like him? 8. The chatterer speaks incessantly; he does not care (*peu lui importe*) whether you listen to him. 9. It will be time for you to announce this news to him to-morrow. 10. How comes it (*se fait-il*) that you are here?

LESSON 38.—THE SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

(continued).

§ 175. The subjunctive is used in a subordinate clause introduced by one of the following conjunctions:—

afin que, <i>in order that.</i>	sans que, <i>without.</i>
avant que, <i>before.</i>	soit que, <i>whether.</i>
jusqu'à ce que, <i>until.</i>	supposé que, <i>supposing that.</i>
bien que, <i>although.</i>	à moins que . . . ne, <i>unless.</i>
pour que, <i>in order that.</i>	de crainte que . . . ne, } <i>for fear</i>
pourvu que, <i>provided that.</i>	de peur que . . . ne, } <i>that, lest.</i>
quoique, <i>although.</i>	

Parlez plus haut, afin que je vous entende.

Speak louder, in order that I may hear you.

Je ne m'y rendrai pas à moins que vous ne m'accompagniez.

I shall not go unless you accompany me.

§ 176. The subjunctive is also used in dependence on the following concessive expressions:—

qui que, <i>whoever.</i>	quel que, <i>whatever (adj.).</i>
quoi que, <i>whatever (pron.).</i>	quelque . . . que, <i>however.</i>

Quels que soient ses talents, il ne réussira pas.

Whatever his talents may be, he will not succeed.

EXERCISE 38.

A.—1. Ils vous suivront pourvu que vous les encouragiez par votre exemple. 2. Quoiqu'ils soient pauvres, ils sont honnêtes. 3. Avant que l'on eût inventé la poudre, les combats étaient plus meurtriers. 4. Travaillez jusqu'à ce que vous soyez habiles. 5. Bien que nous soyons chaudement vêtus (*clad*), nous tremblons de froid. 6. Vous atteindrez le succès, pourvu que vous perséveriez. 7. À moins que nous ne nous trompions, nous arriverons avant eux. 8. Quelle que soit votre bonne volonté, vous ne réussirez pas. 9. Quoiqu'il ait beaucoup d'argent, il n'est pas généreux. 10. Il garda le silence, de peur que sa réponse ne fût mal interprétée.

B.—1. Whoever our enemies may be, whatever their number may be, we do not fear (*craignons*) them. 2. However clever we may be, there always remains something for us to (*à*) learn. 3. You are allowed (*on vous permet*) to enter this shop without buying anything there. 4. Whether you dance or not, you will be invited to our ball. 5. The candidate will communicate with nobody until his composition is finished. 6. Whatever may have been the power of the Romans, their empire has crumbled. 7. In order that you may

succeed, you must apply yourself more. 8. Although you are clever, you are far from knowing (*infin.*) everything. 9. Speak louder in order that you may be heard. 10. Before the war ends, much blood will flow.

LESSON 39.—THE INFINITIVE.

THE INFINITIVE DEPENDENT ON A VERB.

§ 177. In English the infinitive, dependent on a verb, is generally preceded by *to*; e.g. *I want to go, I beg you to go*. More rarely it follows immediately without any connecting word, e.g. *I must go*. In French the place of the English *to* is supplied by one of the prepositions *à* or *de*, but a great many French verbs (considerably more than in English) are followed by an infinitive without preposition.

§ 178. *Infinitive without a Preposition*.—The following are the most important verbs followed by the infinitive without a preposition:—

aimer mieux, *to prefer*.

aller, *to go* (§ 281).

croire, *to believe* (§ 321).

désirer, *to wish*.

devoir, *to be obliged, etc.* (§ 302).

entendre, *to hear*.

espérer, *to hope* (§ 266).

faire, *to make, to cause* (§ 344).

falloir, *to be necessary* (§ 309).

laisser, *to allow*.

oser, *to dare*.

penser, *to think*.

pouvoir, *to be able* (§ 306).

préférer, *to prefer* (§ 266).

savoir, *to knew (how)* (§ 305).

sentir, *to feel* (§ 288).

venir, *to come* (§ 297).

voir, *to see* (§ 310).

vouloir, *to wish* (§ 307).

Allez chercher le médecin.

Go for the doctor.

Il ne faut jamais désespérer.

Never say die.

Je l'entends venir.

I hear him coming.

Pouvez-vous sortir ?

Can you go out ?

Obs. It will be seen that many of the above correspond to the so-called auxiliaries of mood, *can, will, etc.*, which in English are followed by a simple infinitive.

EXERCISE 39.

A.—1. Je compte aller voir l'Exposition de Paris. 2. N'avez-vous pas entendu tonner cette nuit ? 3. Il aime mieux croire de perfides conseillers. 4. Je croirais nuire à vos intérêts en agissant ainsi.

5. Après ces paroles ils laissèrent tomber la conversation. 6. Faudra-t-il abandonner la position sans combattre? 7. La mouche du coche pensait faire marcher l'attelage. 8. Laisser faire et laisser dire n'est pas toujours sage. 9. Comment osez-vous répéter une semblable histoire? 10. Je désirerais voir tout le monde heureux.

B.—1. Ought (*Devriez*) you not to have more indulgence for others? 2. They could not hope to succeed better. 3. They thought to frighten their adversaries by words. 4. "What can (*savez*) you do?" Aesop was asked. "Everything," he replied. 5. All at once he felt himself grow weak. 6. Do you prefer to go to the concert or to the theatre? I would rather stay here. 7. Before starting (*infin.*) I wish to come and take leave of you. 8. I wish to make ready (*to make to prepare*) your room. 9. Hurry, if you wish to arrive in time. 10. From our windows it will be possible to (*de*) see the procession pass.

LESSON 40.—THE INFINITIVE (*continued*).

THE INFINITIVE DEPENDENT ON A VERB (*continued*).

§ 179. The following verbs take *de* before a following infinitive:—

achever, *to finish* (§ 258).

avertir, *to warn*.

cesser, *to cease*.

commander, *to command*.

craindre, *to fear* (§ 329).

dire, *to tell, to bid* (§ 342).

finir, *to finish*.

menacer, *to threaten* (§ 275).

mériter, *to deserve*.

offrir, *to offer* (§ 293).

oublier, *to forget*.

parler, *to speak*.

permettre, *to allow* (§ 346).

persuader, *to persuade*.

prier, *to beg*.

promettre, *to promise* (§ 346).

proposer, *to propose*.

recommander, *to recommend*.

refuser, *to refuse*.

regretter, *to regret*.

soupçonner, *to suspect*.

tâcher, *to try*.

Je lui ai dit de rentrer.

I told him to come in.

Vous méritez d'être puni.

You deserve to be punished.

Priez-le de rester.

Beg him to stop.

§ 180. The following verbs take à before a following infinitive :—

accoutumer, <i>to accustom.</i>	enseigner, <i>to teach.</i>
aider, <i>to help.</i>	exhorter, <i>to exhort.</i>
aimer, <i>to like.</i>	hésiter, <i>to hesitate.</i>
apprendre, <i>to learn, to teach</i> (§ 345).	inviter, <i>to invite.</i>
aspirer, <i>to aspire.</i>	parvenir, <i>to succeed</i> (§ 297).
chercher, <i>to seek.</i>	penser, <i>to think.</i>
commencer, } <i>to begin</i> (§§ 275, 346).	préparer, <i>to prepare.</i>
se mettre, }	réussir, <i>to succeed.</i>
consentir, <i>to consent</i> (§ 288).	servir, <i>to serve</i> (§ 289).
encourager, <i>to encourage</i> (§ 274).	songer, <i>to think</i> (§ 274).

Aimez-vous à danser ?

Do you like dancing ?

Je vous apprendrai à vivre.

I will teach you to behave.

On l'a encouragé à persévérer.

He has been encouraged to persevere.

Obs. The preceding lists contain only the commonest verbs. Many others might be added, including several reflexive verbs. There are also a few which take either à or de, in some cases with a slight distinction of meaning.

EXERCISE 40.

A.—1. Il cherchera à se mettre à votre disposition. 2. Encouragez-les à résister à l'ennemi. 3. Ils n'avaient pas pensé à se préparer à subir l'examen. 4. Ils refusent de se rendre. 5. Ce fut avec difficulté qu'on leur persuada de se rendre. 6. J'avais oublié de vous proposer de m'accompagner. 7. J'ai achevé de lire le livre que vous m'aviez prêté. 8. Il ne cessait de nous répéter la même chose. 9. Je le soupçonne de regretter d'avoir agi inconsidérément. 10. Nous songerons à vous avertir de parler à votre tour.

B.—1. There you are ! We were speaking of going to look for you. 2. I beg you to recommend (to) him to act with promptitude. 3. I suspect him of thinking of taking his revenge. 4. We were taught to accustom ourselves to endure fatigue. 5. He succeeded in attaining to the highest situation. 6. We accustomed ourselves to learn to speak elegantly. 7. He did not hesitate to declare that he did not like getting up. 8. The general commanded to cease firing (*the fire*). 9. We should fear to displease (to) our friends. 10. Do not hesitate to set to work early.

LESSON 41.—THE INFINITIVE (*continued*).THE INFINITIVE AFTER *sans, après, pour, par*.

§ 181. It will have been observed from the foregoing examples that the French infinitive is frequently used for the English gerund in *-ing*: this is especially the case after the prepositions *sans, après, pour, par*, and after all prepositions compounded with *de*, such as *avant de, before, à force de, by dint of, de peur de, for fear of*, etc.

Il partit sans rien dire.

He started without saying anything.

Après avoir dit cela, il se tut.

After having said that, he was silent.

Nous le ferons pour vous plaire.

We will do it to please you.

Ils finirent par céder.

They ended by yielding.

Avant de partir, il bénit ses enfants.

Before starting, he blessed his children.

NOTE.—The preposition *en* alone is followed by the present participle (§ 183).

Il pâlit en disant cela.

He turned pale on saying that.

EXERCISE 41.

A.—1. Il partira sans se plaindre. 2. Il faut manger pour vivre et non vivre pour manger. 3. Dieu a créé les hommes pour le connaître, l'aimer et le servir. 4. Au premier son de la cloche l'enfant cessa de jouer. 5. Il a gardé le silence de peur de se trahir. 6. Je désire lire mon courrier en déjeunant. 7. En arrivant à la gare, nous y trouvâmes nos amis. 8. C'est en étudiant sans cesse qu'on arrive à la science. 9. Vous finirez par vous rompre le cou. 10. À force de travailler, vous arriverez au succès.

B.—1. The unfortunate traveller remained three days without eating. 2. Do you think you can learn without studying? 3. After sailing steadily westward, Columbus ended by reaching America. 4. He has tried everything without succeeding in (*à*) anything. 5. The old proverb tells us to turn round our tongue seven times before speaking. 6. They started early in order to arrive (the) first (*m. plur.*). 7. We have said our lesson without making a mistake. 8. By dint of persevering one succeeds in every enterprise. 9. You are not serious in speaking thus. 10. You will arrive at nothing by working so little.

LESSON 42.—THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE.

THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE.

§ 182. The present participle, when used with its true verbal force, is invariable.

Regardez ces petites filles jouant dans le jardin.

Look at those little girls playing in the garden.

THE GERUND.

§ 183. The present participle, used as a gerund, is preceded by the preposition *en*, meaning *in*, *by*, *while*.

En disant ces mots, il pâlit.

In saying these words, he turned pale.

En agissant ainsi, vous avez perdu son amitié.

By acting thus you have lost his friendship.

THE VERBAL ADJECTIVE.

§ 184. The present participle, when used as an adjective, agrees with its substantive in gender and number.

Ces jeunes filles sont charmantes.

Those girls are charming.

EXERCISE 42.

A.—1. Regardez les abeilles butinant sur les fleurs. 2. Notre cœur est aimante et dévouée. 3. Les Gaulois étaient une nation remuante, aimant à faire la guerre. 4. Les flots écumants s'avancent en mugissant. 5. On entendait les cris déchirants des victimes appelant au secours. 6. Mille cris discordants éclatèrent, déchirant nos oreilles. 7. On a répandu des bruits alarmants. 8. Elles entrèrent en criant, alarmant tout le monde. 9. Ces enfants ne sont guère caressants. 10. La mère, caressant ses enfants, les rassura bien vite.

B.—1. The smiling valleys of the Black Forest are very green. 2. The two friends, laughing at (*de*) their fright, continued their walk. 3. Persons recovering from illness require strengthening food (*plur.*). 4. Savages, disfiguring the image of the Divinity, pay homage to appalling idols. 5. The study of living languages is very interesting. 6. This lecture, interesting everybody, was much appreciated. 7. The old man approached tottering. 8. The nurse guides the tottering steps of the baby. 9. It is by amusing children that study is rendered attractive to them. 10. Does not the history of this country seem to you interesting?

LESSON 43.—THE PAST PARTICIPLE.

THE PAST PARTICIPLE AS AN ADJECTIVE.

§ 185. The past participle used as an adjective agrees in number and gender with the substantive or pronoun to which it refers.

Des hommes armés se précipitèrent dans l'église.
Armed men rushed into the church.

THE PAST PARTICIPLE WITH ÊTRE.

§ 186. The past participle used with être agrees with the subject in gender and number.

Vos sœurs sont arrivées. Nos maisons ont été vendues.
Your sisters have arrived. Our houses have been sold.

THE PAST PARTICIPLE WITH AVOIR.

§ 187. The past participle used with avoir agrees with a preceding direct object; otherwise it is invariable.

Où avez-vous rencontré ces dames ?
Where did you meet these ladies ?

But,

Voilà les dames que (object) j'ai rencontrées.
There are the ladies that I met.
Où les (object) avez-vous rencontrées ?
Where did you meet them ?

EXERCISE 43.

A.—1. Les voyageurs, enchantés du bon accueil, ne cachèrent pas leur satisfaction. 2. J'ai perdu une sœur et une mère bien aimées. 3. Ce sont des enfants charmants, aimés de tout le monde. 4. Nos amis sont partis ce matin. 5. La garance et l'indigo sont employés en teinture. 6. Quand a été reçue cette effrayante nouvelle ? 7. Les espérances des cultivateurs ont été déçues. 8. Ces artistes ont dessiné les ruines de la Grèce. 9. L'ambassade japonaise a séjourné deux mois à Paris, puis est partie pour Londres. 10. Toutes les fleurs que vous avez plantées ont péri, faute d'avoir été arrosées.

B.—1. The flowers that you have drawn are water-lilies. 2. Have we not received your friends well ? 3. The friends that you have received so badly are offended. 4. Two of my compatriots have breakfasted with me this morning. 5. The peaches that you have eaten

have been sent from Bordeaux. 6. We had sent some fruit and flowers to your mother. 7. Have you not received the books that you had asked for? 8. I have deserved the rebukes that you have addressed to me. 9. The workmen who had arrived yesterday have finished the repairs. 10. All those who have visited the galleries of the Louvre have admired the paintings of Rubens.

LESSON 44.—THE PAST PARTICIPLE (*continued*).

THE PAST PARTICIPLE OF REFLEXIVE VERBS.

§ 188. The auxiliary *être*, used in forming the compound tenses of reflexive verbs, is really equivalent to *avoir*, and hence agreement takes place if the direct object precedes the verb.

Elles se (object) sont trompées.

They have made a mistake.

§ 189. In order to decide whether the past participle should agree or not, it is only necessary in most instances to see whether the reflexive pronoun is accusative (direct object) or dative (indirect object). Thus:—

{ Elle s'est blessée au doigt.
 { Elle s'est blessé le doigt.
She has hurt her finger.

In the first sentence (*lit.* She has hurt herself in the finger) *se* is accusative, and agreement takes place. In the second (*lit.* She has hurt to herself the finger) *se* is dative, and the past participle remains invariable.

NOTE.—The past participle of a reflexive verb may, however, have a preceding direct object other than the reflexive pronoun: in such cases agreement takes place.

Elles se sont rappelé ces faits.

They have recalled these facts.

Voici les faits qu'elles se sont rappelés.

These are the facts which they have recalled.

Here *rappelés* agrees with *faits*, *se* being dative.

THE PAST PARTICIPLE OF IMPERSONAL VERBS.

§ 190. The past participle of impersonal verbs is invariable.

Les chaleurs qu'il a fait cette semaine ont été insupportables.

The heat that there has been this week has been unbearable.

EXERCISE 44.

A.—1. Nous nous sommes d'abord adressés à vous. 2. Ils se sont adressé des invectives. 3. Elles se sont fait (*made*) une réputation méritée. 4. La réputation qu'ils se sont faite n'est pas enviable. 5. Les soldats qui se sont distingués seront décorés. 6. Nos arbres sont morts par suite des froids qu'il a fait cet hiver. 7. Ne s'est-il pas glissé quelques erreurs dans votre compte? 8. Il est arrivé des troupes pour relever la garnison. 9. Combien de peine il nous a fallu pour comprendre les règles du participe! 10. Ils se sont amèrement reproché leur paresse.

B.—1. The travellers who have ventured into this hotel have been fleeced there. 2. The roof of the tunnel having collapsed, many travellers were crushed. 3. The ancients had imagined that the earth was flat. 4. After having seized on Gaul the Romans tried to colonize it. 5. They got up when they perceived your presence. 6. The storms that there have been (*use faire*) this year have ruined the harvests. 7. The thermometer marked yesterday the greatest heat that there has been for ten years. 8. How much (*Que de*) perseverance have they not required (*use falloir*)! 9. The news has spread rapidly. 10. Many centuries have elapsed since the taking of Troy.

LESSON 45.—PLURAL OF SUBSTANTIVES AND ADJECTIVES.

MODES OF FORMING THE PLURAL.

§ 191. GENERAL RULE.—The plural of substantives and adjectives is formed in French (as in English) by the addition of -s to the singular.

la mère, *the mother.*

l'enfant, *the child.*

grand, *great.*

petit, *small.*

les mères, *the mothers.*

les enfants, *the children.*

grands.

petits.

§ 192. There are a few classes of exceptions, and in some cases it is necessary to commit lists to memory.

§ 193. Substantives and adjectives ending in -s, -x, or -z do not change in the plural.

le fils, <i>the son.</i>	les fils, <i>the sons.</i>
la voix, <i>the voice.</i>	les voix, <i>the voices.</i>
le nez, <i>the nose.</i>	les nez, <i>the noses.</i>
gros, <i>big.</i>	gros.
heureux, <i>happy.</i>	heureux.

§ 194. Substantives ending in -au or -eu and adjectives ending in -eau form their plural by adding -x.

le couteau, <i>the knife.</i>	les couteaux, <i>the knives.</i>
le neveu, <i>the nephew.</i>	les neveux, <i>the nephews.</i>
beau, <i>fine</i>	beaux.
nouveau, <i>new</i>	nouveaux.

NOTE.—Of the three French adjectives ending in -eu, two form their plural with -s and one with -x.

bleu, <i>blue.</i>	bleus.
feu, <i>late.</i>	feus.
hébreu, <i>Hebrew.</i>	hébreux.

§ 195. Substantives and adjectives ending in -al change -al into -aux in the plural.

le cheval, <i>the horse.</i>	les chevaux, <i>the horses.</i>
le journal, <i>the newspaper.</i>	les journaux, <i>the newspapers.</i>
amical, <i>friendly.</i>	amicaux.
national, <i>national.</i>	nationaux.

NOTE 1.—The following substantives in -al follow the general rule and add -s, as also do a few other words of rare occurrence :—

le bal, <i>the dance.</i>	le festival, <i>the festival.</i>
le carnaval, <i>the carnival.</i>	le régal, <i>the treat.</i>

NOTE 2.—A number of adjectives ending in -al are not used in the masculine plural : such are final, final, glacial, icy, matinal, early.

§ 196. Seven substantives ending in -ou form their plural by adding -x.

le bijou, <i>the jewel.</i>	le genou, <i>the knee.</i>
le caillou, <i>the pebble.</i>	le hibou, <i>the owl.</i>
le chou, <i>the cabbage.</i>	le joujou, <i>the plaything.</i>
le pou, <i>the louse.</i>	

Cbs. All other substantives ending in -ou follow the general rule and add -s ; e.g. le verrou, *the bolt*, has plural les verrous.

§ 197. Seven substantives ending in *-ail* form their plural by changing *-ail* into *-aux*.

le bail, *the lease.*

le corail, *the coral.*

l'émail, *the enamel.*

le soupirail, *the air-hole.*

le travail, *work.*

le vantail, *the folding door.*

le vitrail, *the stained-glass window.*

Obs. All other substantives ending in *-ail* follow the general rule and add *-s*; *e.g.* l'éventail, *the fan*, has plural *les éventails*.

§ 198. The adjective *tout*, *all*, has masculine plural *tous*.

§ 199. The feminine plural of all adjectives without exception is formed by adding *-s* to the feminine singular.

SUBSTANTIVES WITH TWO PLURALS.

§ 200. The following masculine substantives have two plural forms with different meanings:—

Singular.		Plural.
aïeul, <i>grandfather</i> , aïeux, <i>ancestors</i> ancestor		aïeuls, <i>grandfathers</i>
œil, <i>eye</i>	yeux, <i>eyes</i>	œils, used only in compounds, <i>e.g.</i> œils-de-bœuf, <i>oval windows</i> œils-de-chat, <i>cat's-eyes</i> (gems)
ciel, <i>sky</i>	cieux, <i>skies, heavens</i>	ciels, <i>climates, skies</i> (in pictures) ciels de lit, <i>canopies</i>

EXERCISE 45.

A.—1. Ces bonnes mères ont des enfants grands et forts. 2. Les nez grecs sont droits et les nez romains sont courbés. 3. Des gaz méphitiques s'échappaient de l'égout. 4. Vos neveux sont arrivés le dimanche des Rameaux. 5. Leurs nouveaux chevaux ne sont pas très beaux. 6. Les flots bleus de la Méditerranée reflétaient les feux des Hébreux. 7. Ces grossiers cailloux orneront, après la taille, des bijoux royaux. 8. Pour trois sous j'ai acheté deux beaux choux rouges. 9. Plus de trois cents petits bateaux pêchent les coraux sur les côtes d'Algérie. 10. Tous ces émaux et tous ces vitraux sont du seizième siècle.

B.—1. The young girls laid their fans on their mothers' knees. 2. Our ancestors, the Franks, had blue eyes; they wore long hair (*plur.*) 3. From the height of the heavens the gods descended to mix with (*à*) mortals. 4. Three big owls have made (*fait*) their nest in the holes of the wall. 5. The evils of the war have been related by the

papers. 6. The bodies of our dead horses were a feast for the jackals. 7. During the carnivals of 1896 and 1897 I went to four masked balls. 8. We are enchanted to hear voices so pure. 9. Have you bought some nuts of (*chez*) these French dealers? 10. The big horses of Pêrche (*percherons*) are much esteemed.

LESSON 46.—FEMININE OF SUBSTANTIVES AND ADJECTIVES.

§ 201. GENERAL RULE.—The feminine singular of substantives and adjectives is formed by the addition of -e mute to the masculine singular.

Masculine.	Feminine.	
ami	amie	<i>friend</i>
Espagnol	Espagnole	<i>Spaniard</i>
étudiant	étudiante	<i>student</i>
brun	brune	<i>brown</i>
français	française	<i>French</i>
poli	polie	<i>polite</i>

§ 202. Adjectives and some substantives which in the masculine singular end in -e mute retain the same form in the feminine.

Masculine.	Feminine.	
élève	élève	<i>pupil</i>
esclave	esclave	<i>slave</i>
belge	belge	<i>Belgian</i>
jeune	jeune	<i>young</i>

NOTE.—The following substantives ending in -e mute form their feminine by adding -sse :—

Masculine.	Feminine.
âne, <i>he-ass</i>	ânesse, <i>she-ass</i>
comte, <i>count</i>	comtesse, <i>countess</i>
druide, <i>druid</i>	druidesse, <i>druidess</i>
hôte, <i>host</i>	hôtesse, <i>hostess</i>
maître, <i>master</i>	maîtresse, <i>mistress</i>
nègre, <i>negro</i>	négresse, <i>negress</i>
ogre, <i>ogre</i>	ogresse, <i>ogress</i>
prêtre, <i>priest</i>	prêtresse, <i>priestess</i>
prophète, <i>prophet</i>	prophétresse, <i>prophetess</i>
prince, <i>prince</i>	princesse, <i>princess</i>
Suisse, <i>Swiss</i>	Suissesse
tigre, <i>tiger</i>	tigresse, <i>tigress</i>
traître, <i>traitor</i>	traitresse, <i>traitress</i>
vicomte, <i>viscount</i>	vicomtesse, <i>viscountess</i>

With these may be classed the following, which do not end in -e mute.

Masculine.	Feminine.
abbé , <i>abbot</i>	abbesse , <i>abbess</i>
devin , <i>soothsayer</i>	devineresse
dieu , <i>god</i>	déesse , <i>goddess</i>
duc , <i>duke</i>	duchesse , <i>duchess</i>
pair , <i>peer</i>	pairesse , <i>peeress</i>

§ 203. Substantives and adjectives ending in -er, and eight adjectives ending in -et, take the grave accent over the penultimate -e- in the feminine.

Masculine.	Feminine.	
fermier	fermière	<i>farmer</i>
écolier	écolière	<i>scholar</i>
cher	chère	<i>dear</i>
premier	première	<i>first</i>
complet	complète	<i>complete</i>
concret	concrète	<i>concrete</i>
discret	discrète	<i>discreet</i>
incomplet	incomplète	<i>incomplete</i>
indiscret	indiscrète	<i>indiscreet</i>
inquiet	inquiète	<i>anxious</i>
replet	replète	<i>corpulent</i>
secret	secrète	<i>secret</i>

§ 204. Adjectives ending in -gu in the masculine singular form their feminine in -guë.

Masculine.	Feminine.	
aigu	aiguë	<i>acute</i>
ambigu	ambiguë	<i>ambiguous</i>
contigu	contiguë	<i>contiguous</i>
exigu	exiguë	<i>scanty</i>

Obs. The diacresis over the e (ë) indicates that **gu** and **e** are separate syllables; hence **u** has its ordinary sound, and is not merely used to harden the sound of **g**. Compare the values of **u** in the English words *ague* and *league*, though we do not use the diacresis to mark the pronunciation of the former word.

EXERCISE 46.

A.—1. Cette jeune esclave noire arrive de la colonie belge du Congo. 2. Les druidesses étaient les prêtresses de la Gaule. 3. Les Anglaises que j'ai rencontrées étaient blondes, grandes et jolies.

4. Mes élèves russes et mes élèves suédoises sont très intelligentes.
 5. J'ai deviné la secrète douleur de notre chère fille. 6. Le prince et les ducs, ses fils, ont reçu la comtesse espagnole. 7. La jeune fermière envoya ses premières pêches à la vicomtesse sa maîtresse.
 8. La dernière fois que je rencontraï l'écolière, elle était très inquiète.
 9. Déborah fut une des prophétesses du peuple hébreu. 10. La célèbre duchesse de M—— fut abbesse de ce couvent.

B.—1. The mistress of this negress is a Moorish princess. 2. Our hostess was the charming Countess of X——. 3. The needles of the haberdasher, (*f.*) our neighbour, are very good. 4. The teeth of the tigress are sharp. 5. Has not your little cousin a blue frock? 6. These Spanish students (*f.*) are very dark. 7. Our home is near (to) the palace of the princess. 8. Their last answer was ambiguous. 9. Minerva was a goddess of the ancient Romans. 10. Are you not afraid that your question may be considered indiscreet?

LESSON 47.—FEMININE OF SUBSTANTIVES AND ADJECTIVES (*continued*).

§ 205. Adjectives ending in **-c** in the masculine form their feminine in (*a*) **-che**, (*b*) **-que**, (*c*) **-cque**.

Masculine.	Feminine	
(<i>a</i>) blanc	blanche	<i>white</i>
franc	franche	<i>frank</i>
sec	sèche	<i>dry</i>
(<i>b</i>) caduc	caduque	<i>decrepid</i>
franc	franque	<i>Frankish</i>
public	publique	<i>public</i>
ture	turque	<i>Turkish</i>
(<i>c</i>) grec	grecque	<i>Greek</i>

§ 206. Substantives and adjectives ending in **-f** or **-x** in the masculine change this to **-ve**, **-se** respectively in the feminine.

Masculine.	Feminine.	
serf	serve	<i>serf</i>
actif	active	<i>active</i>
neuf	neuve	<i>new</i>
époux	épouse	<i>spouse</i>
heureux	heureuse	<i>happy</i>
jaloux	jalouse	<i>jealous</i>

NOTE.—The following adjectives ending in *-x* form their feminines irregularly :—

Masculine.	Feminine.	
doux	douce	<i>sweet</i>
faux	fausse	<i>false</i>
roux	rousse	<i>red</i>
vieux	vieille	<i>old</i>

§ 207. Adjectives with the following terminations double the final consonant before *-e* mute in the feminine :—

- (a) *-el, -eil, -ol*;
 (b) *-en, -on*;
 (c) *-et, -ot*.
 (d) *-as*.

Masculine.	Feminine.	
(a) cruel	cruelle	<i>cruel</i>
pareil	pareille	<i>like</i>
fol (see § 208)	folle	<i>mad</i>
(b) ancien	ancienne	<i>ancient</i>
bon	bonne	<i>good</i>
(c) net	nette	<i>clear</i>
sot	sotte	<i>foolish</i>
(d) gras	grasse	<i>fat</i>

NOTE.—The eight adjectives in *-et* given in § 203 form the feminine in *-ête*.

§ 208. Five adjectives have a double form for the masculine singular; they are—

Before consonant or <i>h</i> aspirate.	Before vowel or <i>h</i> mute.	Feminine.	
beau	bel	belle	<i>beautiful</i>
nouveau	nouvel	nouvelle	<i>new</i>
fou	fol	folle	<i>mad</i>
mou	mol	molle	<i>soft</i>
vieux	vieil	vieille	<i>old</i>

EXAMPLES: un beau garçon, *a handsome boy*.

une belle fille, " *girl*.
 un bel enfant, " *child*.
 un bel homme, " *man*.

NOTE.—Substantives ending in *-eau* also form their feminine in *-elle*.

chameau, *camel*
jumeau, *twin*

chamelle
jumelle

EXERCISE 47.

A.—1. L'aigle aux (*with*) serres cruelles et aiguës fondit sur la douce colombe. 2. Autrefois on appelait les jeunes garçons joveux ou damoiseaux, et les jeunes filles joveuses ou damoiselles. 3. Mes troupeaux se sont augmentés de (*by*) quatre-vingts agneaux et de quatre-vingt-dix agnelles. 4. On afficha sur la place publique que la nouvelle était fautive. 5. Une fine moustache rousse ornait la bouche vermeille du jeune dieu. 6. La cruelle tigresse fondit sur la craintive antilope. 7. Une pauvre vieille toute caduque ramassait des branches sèches. 8. Ne sois pas jalouse, chère fille, si ta sœur est plus heureuse que toi. 9. Un franc parler demande une réponse franche. 10. Sous la loi franque, les serfs et les serves étaient vendus avec la terre.

B.—1. The Greek army experienced a complete defeat. 2. The Turkish proposals have been judged indiscreet. 3. Has not this handsome child (*m.*) a twin sister? 4. This old woman cherishes the foolish hope of appearing always young. 5. I shall write to my old friend on (*à*) the occasion of the New Year. 6. This pear is soft, try rather this fine apricot. 7. These good ladies are connected by (*de*) an old and close friendship. 8. The foolish farmer (*f.*) has sold her rich and fertile meadow. 9. Choose a discreet, gentle and active companion (*f.*) 10. The young and coquettish bride wore a dress of white silk.

LESSON 48.—FEMININE OF SUBSTANTIVES AND ADJECTIVES (*continued*).

§ 209. From substantives and adjectives in *-eur* feminines are formed in four different ways.

§ 210. (i) Words derived from Latin comparative adjectives add *-e* mute according to the general rule. Such are—

Masculine.	Feminine.
extérieur (<i>exteriorum</i>)	extérieure <i>outer</i>
inférieur (<i>inferiorum</i>)	inférieure <i>lower</i>
intérieur (<i>interiorum</i>)	intérieure <i>inner</i>
meilleur (<i>meliorum</i>)	meilleure <i>better</i>
supérieur (<i>superiorum</i>)	supérieure <i>superior</i>

§ 211. (ii) Words formed from the stems of present participles change *-eur* into *-euse*.

Masculine.	Feminine.
danseur , <i>dancer</i>	danseuse
pêcheur , <i>fisherman</i>	pêcheuse , <i>fisherwoman</i>

§ 212. (iii) Words in *-teur* derived from Latin substantives in *-tor(em)* change *-teur* into *-trice*.

Masculine.	Feminine
acteur , <i>actor</i>	actrice , <i>actress</i>
bienfaiteur , <i>benefactor</i>	bienfaitrice , <i>benefactress</i>
instituteur , <i>teacher</i>	institutrice

§ 213. A few words in *-eur* form the feminine by changing *-eur* into *-eresse*. Some of these words have also the form in *-euse*, that in *-eresse* being restricted to some special meaning.

Masculine.	Feminine.
chasseur , <i>hunter</i>	{ chasseuse , <i>huntress</i> chasseresse (poetical)
défendeur , <i>defendant</i>	défenderesse
demandeur , <i>beggar, plaintiff</i>	{ demandeuse , <i>beggar</i> demanderesse , <i>plaintiff</i>
enchanteur , <i>enchanter</i>	enchanteresse , <i>enchantress</i>
pêcheur , <i>sinner</i>	pêcheresse
vengeur , <i>avenger</i>	vengeresse

NOTE.—With these may be conveniently classed:—

Masculine.	Feminine.
débiteur , <i>news monger, debtor</i>	{ débiteuse , <i>news monger</i> débitrice , <i>debtor</i>
chanteur , <i>singer</i>	{ chanteuse , cantatrice , <i>noted professional singer</i>

EXERCISE 48.

A.—1. La grande actrice, Sarah Bernhardt, est la créatrice des principaux rôles de plusieurs de nos meilleures tragédies. 2. La comtesse a été la bienfaitrice de sa vieille institutrice. 3. La nouvelle danseuse est supérieure à l'ancienne. 4. Cette riche jeune fille est la consolatrice de sa vieille mère. 5. L'apparence extérieure des gens est souvent bien trompeuse. 6. La Patti a été la plus grande cantatrice de son époque. 7. La femme de ce pâtissier est une débitrice de mensonges. 8. La principale chanteuse de ce concert populaire est ma débitrice. 9. Circé l'enchanteresse garda Ulysse pendant de longues années. 10. Je restai sourd aux sollicitations de cette demandeuse effrontée.

B.—1. The Belgian actress sent help (*plur.*) to the poor woman. 2. My cousin (*f.*) is of age, but yours is still under age. 3. The Romans built a temple to Diana the Huntress. 4. The hunters and huntresses were pursuing the game. 5. The defendant (*f.*) was condemned to pay three thousand francs to the plaintiff (*f.*). 6. Avenging flames consumed the city. 7. The Lord pardoned the repentant sinner (*f.*). 8. This wine is of an inferior quality. 9. The fisherwomen awaited the return of the boats. 10. This woman is a liar; I had a better opinion of her.

LESSON 49.—FEMININE OF SUBSTANTIVES AND ADJECTIVES (*continued*).

§ 214. In the following pairs of substantives the masculine and feminine (except in the case of *jument*) come from the same stem, but present various irregularities:—

Masculine.	Feminine.
cheval , <i>horse</i>	jument , <i>mare</i>
	cavale (in poetry)
tsar , <i>czar</i>	tsarine , <i>czarina</i>
empereur , <i>emperor</i>	impératrice , <i>empress</i>
fil , <i>son</i>	fil , <i>daughter</i>
gouverneur , <i>governor</i>	gouvernante , <i>governess</i>
héros ,* <i>hero</i>	héroïne , <i>heroine</i>
loup , <i>wolf</i>	louve
neveu , <i>nephew</i>	nièce , <i>niece</i>
paysan , <i>peasant</i>	paysanne
roi , <i>king</i>	reine , <i>queen</i>
serviteur , <i>servant</i>	servante

§ 215. In the following pairs of substantives the masculine form is longer than the feminine:—

Masculine.	Feminine.
canard , <i>drake</i>	cane , <i>duck</i>
cochon , <i>pig</i>	coche , <i>sov</i>
compagnon , <i>companion</i>	compagne
dindon , <i>turkey-cock</i>	dinde , <i>turkey-hen</i>
mulet , <i>mule</i>	mule
nourricier , <i>foster-father</i>	nourrice , <i>nurse</i>
vieillard , <i>old man</i>	vieille , <i>old woman</i>

* The **h** aspirate of **héros** becomes mute in its derivatives; thus, we write **le héros**, but **l'héroïne**, **l'héroïsme**, etc.

§ 216. The following pairs of substantives are of totally different origin :—

Masculine.	Feminine.
bélier, <i>ram</i>	brebis, <i>ewe</i>
bœuf, <i>ox</i>	vache, <i>cow</i>
taureau, <i>bull</i> }	
bouc, <i>he-goat</i>	chèvre, <i>she-goat</i>
cerf, <i>stag</i>	biche, <i>hind</i>
coq, <i>cock</i>	poule, <i>hen</i>
frère, <i>brother</i>	sœur, <i>sister</i>
garçon, <i>boy</i>	fille, <i>girl</i>
homme, <i>man</i>	femme, <i>woman</i>
mari, <i>husband</i>	femme, <i>wife</i>
monsieur, <i>gentleman</i>	dame, <i>lady</i>
oncle, <i>uncle</i>	tante, <i>aunt</i>
papa, <i>papa</i>	maman, <i>mamma</i>
parrain, <i>godfather</i>	marraine, <i>godmother</i>
père, <i>father</i>	mère, <i>mother</i>

Obs. Many English substantives of common gender, including most of the names of animals, are represented in French by substantives with a fixed gender. Such are—

Masculine.	Feminine.
un éléphant, <i>an elephant</i>	la baleine, <i>the whale</i>
le léopard, <i>the leopard</i>	la panthère, <i>the panther</i>
le serpent, <i>the serpent</i>	la souris, <i>the mouse</i>

In such cases the distinction of sex is expressed by the use of the words *mâle* and *femelle*; *e.g.* :—

un éléphant mâle, *a bull elephant*.
le léopard femelle, *the leopardess*.

§ 217. The following adjectives with irregular feminines do not come under the preceding rules :—

Masculine.	Feminine.	
coi	coite	quiet
favori	favorite	favoured
gentil	gentille	pretty
nul	nulle	null
bénin	bénigne	benign
malin	maligne	malignant
gros	grosse	big
épais	épaisse	thick

Masculine	Feminine.	
expres	expresse	<i>express</i>
profès	professe	<i>professed</i>
absous	absoute	<i>absolved</i>
dissous	dissoute	<i>dissolved</i>
tiers	tierce	<i>third</i>
frais	fraîche	<i>fresh</i>
long	longue	<i>long</i>

EXERCISE 49.

A.—1. Mon oncle Jean est mon parrain, et ma tante Marie ma marraine. 2. Le bouc, la chèvre, et leurs petits chevreaux broutaient sur la colline. 3. Il y a dans le parc des cerfs et des daims, des biches avec leurs faons, et de jolies chevrettes. 4. Le mari de ma marraine est le frère de votre mère. 5. Le monstrueux hippopotame, le serpent boa, la douce gazelle et la sotte autruche se trouvent en Afrique. 6. La fermière vendit ses canards et ses canes, ses dindes et ses dindons pour acheter une truie. 7. Le loup a enlevé de notre troupeau trois brebis, deux agneaux, et un vieux béliet. 8. On se sert de mules et de mulets pour voyager dans les montagnes. 9. L'infortunée reine Brunehaut fut attachée à la queue d'une cavale indomptée. 10. On donne à l'impératrice de Russie le titre de tsarine ou czarine.

B.—1. This large hen is my little daughter's favourite. 2. Those two nice girls are twin sisters. 3. The cool nights of tropical countries engender malignant fever. 4. Their long association was dissolved by the misunderstanding of their wives. 5. I have had the influenza under a mild form. 6. This gentleman and lady have been to see the bull-fight at Seville. 7. This good old man has five sons and six daughters. 8. Joan of Arc, the great French heroine, was a humble peasant. 9. My governess's niece was attacked by a furious she-wolf. 10. Was not this old servant the queen's nurse?

LESSON 50.—COMPOUND SUBSTANTIVES.

COMPOUND SUBSTANTIVES WRITTEN AS ONE WORD.

§ 218. Compound substantives written as one word form their plural in the usual way by the addition of **-s**.

Singular.	Plural.
un contrevent, a shutter	des contrevents
un gendarme, a policeman	des gendarmes
un pourparler, a parley	des pourparlers

§ 219. The following exceptions, however, occur, in which both components take the sign of the plural.

Singular.	Plural.
un gentilhomme, <i>a nobleman</i>	des gentilshommes
un bonhomme, <i>a good-natured man</i>	des bonshommes

§ 220. With the above the following titles may be grouped :—

Singular.	Plural.
monseigneur, <i>My Lord, a lord</i>	messeigneurs, <i>My Lords</i>
monsieur, <i>sir, Mr., gentleman</i>	messieurs, <i>sirs, Messrs., gentlemen</i>
madame, <i>Madam, Mrs.</i>	mesdames, <i>Mesdames</i>
mademoiselle, <i>Miss</i>	mesdemoiselles, <i>Misses</i>

§ 221. The following compounds should also be noticed :—

Singular.	Plural.
une grand'mère, <i>a grandmother</i>	des grand'mères
une grand'messe, <i>a high mass</i>	des grand'messes
une grand'route, <i>a high road</i>	des grand'routes

These, and many other feminines compounded with *grand'*, follow the rule of simple substantives in the formation of the plural.

COMPOUND SUBSTANTIVES WRITTEN WITH HYPHENS.

§ 222. Compound substantives in the strict sense of the word, *i.e.* those of which the components are united by hyphens, are formed in the following ways :—

1. Substantive + substantive. Both components take the mark of the plural.

Singular.	Plural.
un chou-fleur, <i>a cauliflower</i>	des choux-fleurs
un lieutenant-colonel, <i>a lieutenant-colonel</i>	des lieutenants-colonels
un oiseau-mouche, <i>a humming-bird</i>	des oiseaux-mouches
un chat-tigre, <i>a tiger-cat</i>	des chats-tigres

Obs. The compound takes the gender of the more important substantive. Thus *chou-fleur* is a *cabbage* with the form of a flower; *oiseau-mouche* is a *bird* of the size of a fly.

2. Substantive + adjective. Both components take the mark of the plural.

Singular.	Plural.
une basse-cour , <i>a poultry-yard</i>	des basses-cours
un beau-frère , <i>a brother-in-law</i>	des beaux-frères
un cerf-volant , <i>a kite</i>	des cerfs-volants

Obs. The compound naturally takes the gender of the substantive.

3. Substantive + preposition + substantive. The first component only takes the mark of the plural.

Singular.	Plural.
un aide-de-camp , <i>an aide-de-camp</i>	des aides-de-camp
un arc-en-ciel , <i>a rainbow</i>	des arcs-en-ciel
un ver-à-soie , <i>a silkworm</i>	des vers-à-soie

Obs. The compound takes the gender of the first component, the preposition and the second substantive forming together an adjectival phrase.

NOTE.—*Tête-à-tête*, *private conversation*, remains unchanged in the plural.

4. Invariable word + substantive. The substantive only takes the mark of the plural.

Singular.	Plural.
une arrière-pensée , <i>an afterthought</i>	des arrière-pensées
un contre-amiral , <i>a rear-admiral</i>	des contre-amiraux
un sous-officier , <i>a non-commissioned officer</i>	des sous-officiers

Obs. The gender of the compound is that of the component substantive.

5. Verb + substantive. These remain unchanged in the plural.

Singular.	Plural.
un abat-jour , <i>a lamp-shade</i>	des abat-jour
un coupe-gorge , <i>a den of thieves</i>	des coupe-gorge
un réveille-matin , <i>an alarm</i>	des réveille-matin
un tire-bouchon , <i>a corkscrew</i>	des tire-bouchon

Obs. These are masculine.

6. Miscellaneous compounds which do not come under the above heads. These remain unchanged in the plural.

Singular.	Plural.
un ouï-dire, <i>a hearsay</i>	des ouï-dire
un on-dit, <i>a rumour</i>	des on-dit
un passe-partout, <i>a master-key</i>	des passe-partout
un va-nu-pieds, <i>a ragamuffin</i>	des va-nu-pieds

Obs. These are masculine.

EXERCISE 50.

A.—1. On envoya des contre-ordres aux arrière-gardes. 2. J'ai acheté plusieurs bric-à-brac, entre autres trois porte-monnaie et deux chasse-mouches. 3. Ces hommes sont très sorniois, ce sont des pince-sans-rire. 4. Les rues de cette ville sont actuellement de véritables casse-cou. 5. On se sert, en Russie, de chiens-loups pour la chasse à l'ours. 6. Nous avons semé deux plates-bandes de reines-marguerites. 7. Les malfaiteurs engagèrent des pourparlers avec les gendarmes au sujet de leurs passeports. 8. Le petit garçon s'amusait à dessiner des bonshommes. 9. Nous appelons queues-de-rat des limes d'une forme arrondie. 10. Les malfaiteurs donnèrent des crocs-en-jambe aux agents de police.

B.—1. The conversation was full of cock-and-bull stories. 2. The sub-lieutenants were elbowing the rear-admirals at the governor's ball. 3. "My lords," the comedians used to say. (*disaient*) to the noblemen, "come in with your wives and daughters." 4. Our grand-fathers accompanied our grandmothers to high mass. 5. Indictments will be drawn up against (*à*) all offenders. 6. The brandies of Cognac are exported into the whole world. 7. Where did you buy those alarm-clocks? 8. The hunters killed many water-fowl, which stocked their larders. 9. The attorneys-general reside in the departmental chief towns. 10. Redbreasts are larger than humming-birds.

LESSON 51.—ADVERBS OF MANNER. FORMATION.

FORMATION OF ADVERBS FROM ADJECTIVES.

§ 223. 1. Adverbs of manner are formed from adjectives ending in a consonant, by adding -ment to the feminine.

complet	complètement	<i>completely</i>
doux	doucement	<i>gently</i>
franc	franchement	<i>frankly</i>
net	nettement	<i>clearly</i>

§ 224. 2. Adjectives ending in a vowel add -ment to the masculine.

triste	tristement	<i>sadly</i>
aisé	aisément	<i>easily</i>
poli	poliment	<i>politely</i>
absolu	absolument	<i>absolutely</i>

§ 225. 3. Adjectives ending in -ant, -ent, change -nt into -mment. In these cases the final letters of the adjective have become assimilated to the adverbial termination.

courant	couramment	<i>fluently</i>
prudent	prudemment	<i>prudently</i>
savant	savamment	<i>learnedly</i>

EXCEPTIONS TO RULE 1.

§ 226. Nine adjectives ending in a consonant take an acute accent over the -e of the feminine form. They are—

commun	communément	<i>commonly</i>
confus	confusément	<i>confusedly</i>
diffus	diffusément	<i>diffusely</i>
exprès	expressément	<i>expressly</i>
importun	importunément	<i>importunately</i>
obscur	obscurément	<i>obscurely</i>
précis	précisément	<i>precisely</i>
profond	profondément	<i>profoundly</i>
profus	profusément	<i>profusely</i>

EXCEPTIONS TO RULE 2.

§ 227. A few adverbs formed from adjectives in -u indicate the loss of the -e of the feminine by means of a circumflex.

assidu	assidûment	<i>assiduously</i>
continu	continûment	<i>continuously</i>

With the above may be classed—

gai	gaîment (or gaiement)	<i>gaily</i>
-----	-----------------------	--------------

§ 228. The following adverbs formed from adjectives with two forms in the masculine singular (§ 208) should be noticed :—

beau (bel)	bellement	<i>gently</i>
fou (fol)	follement	<i>madly</i>
mou (mol)	mollement	<i>softly</i>
nouveau (nouvel)	nouvellement	<i>newly</i>

§ 229. Eight adjectives ending in **-e** mute take an acute accent over that **-e** when used to form adverbs.

aveugle	aveuglément	<i>blindly</i>
commode	commodément	<i>conveniently</i>
conforme	conformément	<i>conformably</i>
énorme	énormément	<i>enormously</i>
immense	immensément	<i>immensely</i>
incommode	incommodément	<i>inconveniently</i>
opiniâtre	opiniâtrément	<i>obstinately</i>
uniforme	uniformément	<i>uniformly</i>

EXCEPTIONS TO RULE 3.

§ 230. Three adjectives in **-ent** follow Rule 1, and add **-ment** to the feminine.

lent	lentement	<i>slowly</i>
présent	présentement	<i>at present</i>
véhément	véhémentement	<i>vehemently</i>

ADVERBS IRREGULARLY FORMED.

§ 231. bref	brièvement	<i>briefly</i>
impuni	impunément	<i>with impunity</i>
gentil	gentiment	<i>prettily</i>
traître	traîtreusement	<i>treacherously</i>

EXERCISE 51.

A.—1. En parlant trop savamment, on s'exprime parfois obscurément. 2. Travaillons assidûment, mes amis. 3. Nous en prendrons gaiement notre parti. 4. Ces dames sont nouvellement arrivées ici. 5. L'avocat a mollement défendu la cause de l'accusé. 6. N'écoutez pas aveuglément des conseils téméraires. 7. Je suis confortablement et commodément installé dans ma nouvelle demeure. 8. Nous défendrons opiniâtrément le drapeau de la patrie. 9. Parlez lentement et plus distinctement. 10. Nous commencerons présentement l'étude du français.

B.—1. Explain yourself clearly and sedately. 2. Do not act so foolishly. 3. He declared to me coldly, but plainly, what he thought. 4. You loved gambling distractedly; you are punished for it (*en*). 5. He has behaved (*s'est conduit*) very gallantly in this matter. 6. I expressly recommend (to) him not to speak profusely. 7. The fire spread slowly but surely. 8. Explain briefly this rule; we shall understand it easily. 9. The bandit struck him treacherously from behind. 10. Speak to him nicely; do not frighten him.

LESSON 52.

*Learn the verbs mener (§ 258), appeler (§ 261), jeter (§ 262),
préférer (§ 266), créer (§ 269).*

EXERCISE 52.

A.—1. Ils enlevèrent leurs armes aux (*from the*) vaincus.
2. Nous nous lèverons à cinq heures et demie. 3. L'homme s'agite,
Dieu le mène. 4. Les soldats amenèrent leurs prisonniers au général.
5. Je possédais les œuvres complètes de Dumas. 6. Notre mère
vénérée nous appelle. 7. La terre fut créée pour recevoir l'homme.
8. Ne vous le rappelez-vous pas? 9. Ils renouvelèrent les exploits de
leurs ancêtres. 10. Le comité rejettera votre demande.

B.—1. We will create a colony on the banks of the Niger.
2. After the lesson the pupils played. 3. We shall agree to every
reasonable proposition. 4. Do not throw those papers into the
(*au*) fire. 5. We were projecting an excursion into Switzerland.
6. Do you prefer the tulip or the carnation? I prefer the rose.
7. They will renew their promises. 8. We renewed the primings of
our pistols. 9. We are taking these children to school. 10. Go
where glory calls you.

LESSON 53.

Learn the verbs ployer (§ 272), manger (§ 274), tracer (§ 275).

EXERCISE 53.

A.—1. Dieu exauça la prière du prophète. 2. Ne forçons point
notre talent. 3. Ils poussèrent des cris perçants. 4. Le pain que
nous mangeons est de première qualité. 5. Il dérangeait tout ce
que nous arrangeons. 6. Comme nous voyagions peu nous nous
arrangeâmes à nous passer de chevaux. 7. La servante nettoiera la
maison de fond en comble. 8. "Au secours!" cria-t-il, "je me noie."
9. Le bataillon se déploya en tirailleurs. 10. Nous ploierons peut-
être, mais nous ne céderons pas.

B.—1. The rays of the sun pierced the clouds. 2. They will
outstrip all their competitors. 3. I should have desired him to
advance more quickly. 4. Let us alleviate the misfortune of others.
5. France erected a monument to the memory of her defenders.
6. Let us trace for ourselves a rule of conduct. 7. The poor man
will drown himself as his father drowned himself. 8. God said to
Adam: "Thou shalt eat thy bread with (*à*) the sweat of thy brow."
9. Have you already used the pens that I have given you? 10. You
would employ your time better if you appreciated the value of it.

LESSON 54.

Learn the verbs aller (§ 281), envoyer (§ 282), s'en aller (§ 349).

EXERCISE 54.

A.—1. Mon maître m'envoie vous dire qu'il vous renverra vos livres demain. 2. Envoyez-nous nos exercices afin que nous les corrigions. 3. Lui enverras-tu toujours tes lettres trop tard? 4. Il ne faut pas que tu ailles en ville aujourd'hui. 5. Je ne m'en suis pas allé immédiatement. 6. Je souhaite que nous y allions bientôt. 7. Ayant reçu ce qu'il désirait il s'en alla. 8. J'irai vous voir l'été prochain. 9. Allons-nous toujours être menés de cette façon? 10. Ces gens-là vont à une perte certaine.

B.—1. Would you not go to fight if the country called you? 2. I went away as quickly as possible. 3. Will he not go away soon? 4. Would you not go away if I begged you to (*en*)? 5. We shall only go away when you send us. 6. The master is calling you (*sing.*) into school (*en classe*); go thither. 7. We sent them our sincere compliments. 8. Go (*sing.*) and fetch me the flowers that your father has sent me. 9. Whom shall you send to us? 10. What had you sent to them?

LESSON 55.

Learn the verbs bouillir (§ 283), dormir (§ 284), mentir (§ 285), partir (§ 286), se repentir (§ 287), sentir (§ 288), servir (§ 289), sortir (§ 290).

EXERCISE 55.

A.—1. Les valets desservait la table quand j'entraî dans la salle. 2. Permettez-vous qu'ils se servent de vos livres? 3. Ton père t'appelle; sors vite. 4. Nous dormions quand vous appelâtes. 5. "Mentez," disait Voltaire; "il en restera toujours quelque chose." 6. Nous nous rendormimes d'un profond sommeil. 7. Je bous de colère au récit de telles atrocités. 8. L'eau bouillira à cent degrés centigrades. 9. Nous exigeons qu'il consente à s'accuser. 10. A quoi cela sert-il de nier ce qui est évident?

B.—1. My master has come in, sir, but he has gone out again. 2. I think that the water is boiling in the teapot. 3. We were boiling with impatience to see our country again. 4. If you do not sleep well, take a little opium. 5. Pardon the culprit who repents. 6. I felt the storm coming when you started. 7. Must I then lie in order to please you? 8. He never deviated from an extreme caution. 9. When do you wish me to start again? 10. He repented sincerely of his fault.

LESSON 56.

Learn the verbs assaillir (§ 291), cueillir (§ 292),
couvrir (§ 293).

EXERCISE 56.

A.—1. Comment vous ont-ils accueilli? 2. Il faut que vous recueillez ces pauvres naufragés. 3. Le ministre accueillera la pétition des institutrices. 4. Le prêtre se recueillait quelques moments avant l'office. 5. J'ai découvert ce nid de perdrix dans le verger. 6. Ils ouvraient leur porte lorsque nous arrivâmes. 7. Le président déclara la séance ouverte. 8. Offrez ces fleurs à votre mère. 9. Sous les tropiques des nuées de moustiques assaillent le voyageur. 10. Le laboureur tressaille d'espérance à la vue de ses champs couverts de moissons.

B.—1. They will assail you with (*de*) indiscreet questions. 2. He insists on the door being opened. 3. Let us assail the fortress from all sides. 4. What is the matter with you? You start. 5. Go into the garden and pick fruit (*plur.*). 6. We shall gather the fruit of our labour. 7. Must we re-cover the vase that you have uncovered? 8. They are going to close the gate which you have left ajar. 9. I have suffered much last week. 10. We discover every day some new marvel.

LESSON 57.

Learn the verbs fuir (§ 294), vêtir (§ 295), tenir (§ 296),
venir (§ 297).

EXERCISE 57.

A.—1. Est-il possible que nous fuyions devant ces barbares? 2. Fuyez ce spectacle révoltant. 3. Je désire que vous revêtiez vos plus beaux habits. 4. Ma mère vêtait les enfants de ses pauvres voisins. 5. Je ne tiens nullement à connaître cet individu. 6. Il se tint tranquille après cette correction. 7. Je me souviens du temps où vous veniez chez mon père. 8. S'il survenait un troisième assaillant, interviendriez-vous? 9. Il serait prudent que tu fusses ce funeste rivaire. 10. Les soldats effrayés s'enfuyaient en désordre.

B.—1. On (*à*) the death of his uncle, these fields will belong to him. 2. I wish that you may obtain the first place. 3. We will uphold our opinion obstinately. 4. This decanter has contained vinegar, it (*ce*) seems to me. 5. We have warned them that you would come. 6. I was already undressed, ready to go to bed. 7. The emperor had put on a brilliant uniform. 8. After the bath, dress again quickly. 9. We flee the society of the wicked. 10. The robber fled at the approach of the policeman.

LESSON 58.

Learn the verbs courir (§ 298), mourir (§ 299), acquérir (§ 300).

EXERCISE 58.

A.—1. J'ai parcouru tout le chapitre deux de cet ouvrage. 2. Dans leur poignante infortune, ils recouraient à leurs amis. 3. N'avez-vous pas concouru pour cette place? 4. Il acquiert chaque jour de l'expérience. 5. De tous les pays que la République et Napoléon 1^{er} conqurent, il ne resta rien à la France. 6. Quoique je me sois enquis de sa santé, je n'ai aucune nouvelle de lui. 7. Savez-vous quand est mort Georges premier? 8. Rappelons-nous que nous mourrons un jour. 9. Sa mère est morte quand il était encore au berceau. 10. Les passants furent requis de prêter main-forte aux agents.

B.—1. They hastened at the call of their friends in danger and helped them. 2. I do not run as fast as you. 3. Where must I run? 4. Would you have preferred him to die? 5. It is necessary that he should die to expiate his crime. 6. These plants will soon be dead if you do not water them. 7. All the provinces that you conquer (*fut.*) will be acquired to you. 8. Although he had discoursed for two hours, he began again to speak. 9. You will incur your father's anger. 10. Napoleon III. died in exile.

LESSON 59.

Learn the verbs recevoir (§ 301), devoir (§ 302), mouvoir (§ 303), pleuvoir (§ 304).

NOTE.—The verb *devoir*, used as an auxiliary, often corresponds to the English "to be," or "to have," with a sense of obligation, *e.g.* *le concert devait avoir lieu hier, the concert was to take place yesterday; il a dû partir, he has had (been obliged) to go away.* The conditional of *devoir* corresponds to the English auxiliary *ought*, *e.g.* *vous devriez avoir honte de votre conduite, you ought to be ashamed of your conduct.*

EXERCISE 59.

A.—1. L'archevêque de Tours a été promu à la dignité de cardinal. 2. Ce récit pathétique ne vous émouvra-t-il pas? 3. La vue d'une telle misère m'émut profondément. 4. Pleuvra-t-il encore aujourd'hui? 5. Il pleut souvent dans l'ouest de l'Angleterre. 6. Cette usine est mue par la vapeur. 7. Le pauvre animal se mouvait avec difficulté. 8. Réunissant nos efforts, nous mêmes le lourd véhicule. 9. Après le paiement de cette traite, je ne vous devrai plus rien. 10. Je doute qu'il vous doive une telle somme.

B.—1. Had it not rained last week? 2. It is to be hoped (*à espérer*) that it will rain soon. 3. We shall go to your house to-morrow, unless it rains. 4. If you helped me, I should move this burden. 5. Need he be agitated for so little (*peu*)? 6. The horse will not easily move the cart. 7. The custom-house officers levy the dues on imported merchandise (*plur.*). 8. I perceived you coming from afar. 9. He receives all that is due to him. 10. Do you conceive that he has not received your letter?

EXERCISE 59a.

A.—1. Il aurait dû m'avertir. 2. C'est là qu'il devait me rejoindre. 3. Vous devriez venir ici pendant les fêtes de juin. 4. On doit toujours faire son devoir. 5. Il fait très chaud; vous devez avoir bien soif.

B.—1. Which road am I to take? 2. The useless journey that I have had to take (*faire*) has tired me. 3. We ought never to speak without reflecting. 4. How surprised he must have been to see you! 5. It must have been nearly half-past ten when the storm broke out.

LESSON 60.

Learn the verbs savoir (§ 305), pouvoir (§ 306)
vouloir (§ 307).

NOTE.—The verb *savoir* denotes ability resulting from study or practice, while *pouvoir* denotes ability resulting from the absence of obstacles, e.g. *savez-vous patiner? can you skate? oui, mais je ne le peux pas aujourd'hui, yes, but I cannot to-day.*

EXERCISE 60.

A.—1. Nous ne pouvons accepter vos conditions. 2. Même s'il l'avait voulu, il n'aurait pu venir. 3. On ne pourra pas achever ce travail. 4. Puissé-je (*May I*) de mes yeux y voir tomber la foudre! 5. Nous voudrions que vous puissiez parler français. 6. Veuillez, je vous prie, agréer mes amicales salutations. 7. Ce que nous voulons aujourd'hui, nous le voudrions toujours. 8. Je ne sus que répondre. 9. Avez-vous su votre leçon ce matin? 10. Saurez-vous au moins vous tirer d'affaire?

B.—1. Do you (*sing.*) know that this old man was the honour of his race? 2. How should they know it if you had not told it to them? 3. Can I be of any use to you? 4. I can render you this service. 5. We should not like to undertake this task. 6. I wish you to know it. 7. One must know from what one is suffering. 8. Let us know how to conquer or let us know how to die. 9. He did not wish you to know his story. 10. Know that a good soldier prefers death to dishonour.

LESSON 61.

*Learn the verbs valoir (§ 308), falloir (§ 309), voir (§ 310),
asseoir (§ 311).*

NOTE.—The impersonal verb *falloir* should seldom be rendered literally in English, *e.g.* *il m'a fallu partir*, *I had to leave*; *il faut que vous vous taisiez*, *you must hold your tongue*, etc.

EXERCISE 61.

A.—1. N'eût-il pas mieux valu rester? 2. Nous l'achèterons, quelque prix qu'il vaille. 3. Nous avons revu et corrigé la deuxième édition de cet ouvrage. 4. Nous voyons mieux les défauts d'autrui que les nôtres. 5. Voulez-vous que je m'asseye près de vous? 6. Ils ont assis leur fortune sur la ruine des autres. 7. Il faudra vous taire. 8. La terre vaudra ce que vaut l'homme qui la cultive. 9. Il faudra que nous revoyions cela ensemble. 10. Ne vaudrait-il pas mieux que nous les vissions d'abord?

B.—1. We shall see each other again soon. 2. Sit down, I beg you, and listen to me. 3. Do you prefer to be seated or standing? 4. The parliament will settle the taxes on an equitable basis (*plur.*). 5. Shall you not see your friends before? 6. They have foreseen insurmountable difficulties. 7. *Savoir* is sometimes equivalent to *connaître* in French. 8. I was obliged to persevere in this path. 9. I must go to Russia. 10. This horse is only worth the half of what it was worth.

LESSON 62.

Learn the verbs connaître (§ 313), paraître (§ 314), croître (§ 315), naître (§ 316).

NOTE.—*Connaître* means to know in the sense of *to be acquainted with*, *to know by experience*, *e.g.* *connaissiez-vous Paris?* *do you know Paris?* *Savoir* means to know in the sense of *to have learnt*, *to have acquired information*, *e.g.* *je ne sais pas ma leçon*, *I do not know my lesson*.

EXERCISE 62.

A.—1. Mes intentions ont été méconnues. 2. La lumière du phare paraît et disparaît à intervalles réguliers. 3. Il parut étonné que je ne le reconnusse pas. 4. La vigne croît dans le centre et le sud de la France. 5. Le palmier, l'oranger et le citronnier croissent dans les pays tropicaux. 6. Cet arbuste a crû de quatre-vingts centimètres cette année. 7. Notre troupeau s'est accru de vingt et un agneaux. 8. Corneille naquit à Rouen. 9. Où êtes-vous née, madame? Moi, je suis né à Marseille. 10. Quoique le blé naisse avant l'hiver, il croît pendant la saison froide.

B.—1. I knew your brother when he came to study in Paris. 2. It appears that he did not yet know you. 3. I should have preferred our being born in another century. 4. Commerce and industry revive after war. 5. Grow and multiply on the earth. 6. The days are still growing, but they will soon decrease. 7. Let us recognise what we owe our benefactors. 8. The prisoners appeared before the court of assizes. 9. Men ought to recognise the sovereignty of good sense. 10. "Know thyself," says wisdom.

LESSON 63.

Learn the verbs *plaire* (§ 317), *lire* (§ 318), *taire* (§ 319), *boire* (§ 320).

EXERCISE 63.

A.—1. Asseyez-vous, s'il vous plaît. 2. Vous vous complûtes dans une oisive existence. 3. Nous y bûmes de bonne bière et y mangeâmes de la choucroûte. 4. Faudra-t-il que nous buvions ce calice jusqu'à la lie? 5. Il est juste que nous taisions les défauts de nos amis. 6. Peut-être eût-il mieux valu nous taire. 7. Il faut que nous élisions un président. 8. Lisez et relisez les bons auteurs. 9. Plaise à Dieu (*Heaven grant*) que vous ne vous trompiez pas! 10. Il est difficile d'écrire des livres plaisant à tout le monde.

B.—1. I have read your letter with the greatest attention. 2. We re-read this article twice without being able to understand it. 3. This verbose individual is never silent. 4. We became silent on (à) her arrival. 5. We are drinking wine and you are drinking beer. 6. What used you to drink in Germany? 7. I should like you to read in (*de*) a less monotonous manner. 8. They wish you to read their poetry (*plur.*). 9. I do not think that I have pleased her. 10. That man displeased me at first sight.

LESSON 64.

Learn the verbs *croire* (§ 321), *conclure* (§ 322), *moudre* (§ 323), *absoudre* (§ 324), *résoudre* (§ 325).

EXERCISE 64.

A.—1. Nous nous résolûmes à mettre tout en œuvre. 2. Les hommes d'État, résolvant cette question avec habileté, assurèrent la paix. 3. La chaleur a résous toute l'eau en vapeur. 4. La sentence du juge absout complètement votre ami. 5. Elle a été entièrement absoute. 6. Je signai le bail, croyant avoir conclu une bonne affaire. 7. Nous le crûmes sur parole. 8. Nous n'en concluions pas que vous excluiez ces élèves de l'examen. 9. Ce plâtre n'est pas moulu assez fin. 10. Prenez garde de vous couper; ces couteaux sont frais émouls.

B.—1. Let us absolve others as we have been absolved. 2. They were resolved to attempt everything. 3. We have already solved the problem which you are now solving. 4. You must grind this barley again. 5. I should like the cutler to re-sharpen my razors. 6. He wishes to be excluded. 7. We grind our pepper and coffee ourselves. 8. This miller has ground thirty-five sacks of corn in the last week (*depuis huit jours*). 9. We believe that peace will be concluded. 10. We should have thought that they would be excluded.

LESSON 65.

Learn the verbs vivre (§ 326), coudre (§ 327), vaincre (§ 328).

EXERCISE 65.

A.—1. Je vis aussi simplement que vous vécûtes autrefois. 2. Combien de temps avez-vous vécu à Lyon? 3. Ces tribus sauvages vivaient de pêche et de chasse. 4. Il demande que vous recousiez cet accroc. 5. Nous vivrons heureux si nous vainquons nos passions. 6. Son raisonnement convainquant tout le monde, il trouva de nombreux adhérents. 7. Quels ennemis voulez-vous que nous vainquions maintenant? 8. L'hygiène veut que nous vivions sobrement. 9. J'ai demeuré quatre ans chez les Arabes, vivant parmi eux et comme eux. 10. La pauvre veuve vit de son travail, cousant parfois jusqu'à minuit.

B.—1. He vanquished his enemies and conquered their possessions. 2. You do not appear very convinced. 3. The poor father has survived all his children. 4. I hope they will survive their grief. 5. Live on (*de*) little and thou wilt live happy. 6. Your (*sing.*) dress is unsewn, you must sew it up again. 7. Sew together these various pieces of stuff. 8. These girls sew industriously. 9. She sewed up her jacket which she had torn. 10. He would like me to live like a (*en*) hermit.

LESSON 66.

Learn the verbs craindre (§ 329), peindre (§ 330), joindre (§ 331).

EXERCISE 66.

A.—1. Il ceignit son épée et feignit de partir. 2. N'ont-ils pas atteint leur but? 3. N'éteignez pas encore la lampe. 4. Ne craigniez-vous pas le jugement du public? 5. Ne crains rien, je n'enfreindrai pas tes prescriptions. 6. Nous avons craint que le feu ne fût éteint. 7. Nous lui avons enjoint de venir sans retard. 8. Cette table est toute disjointe. 9. Saint-Rémi oignit Clovis et lui enjoignit de rester fidèle au vrai Dieu. 10. En atteignant le but, j'étais à bout de forces.

B.—1. He is a modest man, always fearing to importune others. 2. "What do you fear?" Alexander asked the Gauls. 3. We only

fear lest the sky should fall on our heads. 4. He was groaning piteously when we reached him. 5. Do they fear that we shall not paint this picture well? 6. Have not the workmen painted the doors and shutters? 7. Make haste, if you wish us to rejoin them. 8. She earned her living by dyeing silk. 9. These athletes join strength to agility. 10. Do you wish us to attach somebody to you?

LESSON 67.

Learn the verbs conduire (§ 332), instruire (§ 333), cuire (§ 334), nuire (§ 335).

EXERCISE 67.

A.—1. Nous cuisons nos aliments au gaz. 2. Je déduis de vos explications que vous vous êtes nuï à vous-même. 3. Voulez-vous que je vous conduise à l'hôtel? 4. Les expressions diffuses, nuisant à la clarté du style, conduisent à l'obscurité. 5. Nous instruisons nos élèves et les conduisons au succès. 6. Ces trompeuses doctrines nous induisirent en erreur. 7. L'appartement où ils nous introduisaient n'était pas le nôtre. 8. Elles voudraient que nous les y conduisissions. 9. On enduisit d'une épaisse couche de chaux les murs nouvellement construits. 10. N'avez-vous pas peur que votre mauvaise réputation ne vous nuise?

B.—1. Conduct yourself with prudence, or you will be shown out. 2. The general, reducing the number of his soldiers, led them to victory. 3. We instruct ourselves by (*en*) translating the good authors. 4. The books that you have translated have taught you much. 5. We reconstructed the barn which the fire had destroyed. 6. This cluster of trees injured the beauty of the view. 7. You have destroyed the affection which I had for you. 8. The works that this author produced formerly have injured his glory. 9. Badly-cooked bread injures the health. 10. We must cook our dinner ourselves.

LESSON 68.

Learn the verbs écrire (§ 336), traire (§ 337), suivre (§ 338), rire (§ 339).

EXERCISE 68.

A.—1. Nous nous rîmes de leurs menaces puériles. 2. Il semble que vous riez de nos avis. 3. Il suit vos avis, et s'en trouve bien. 4. En suivant cette rue, vous arriverez à l'hôtel de ville. 5. J'ai été poursuivi par une bande de loups. 6. Avez-vous traité la chèvre blanche? 7. Le billet que vous avez souscrit échoit (*falls due*) demain. 8. En vous écrivant je pense au plaisir de vous revoir. 9. Le docteur me prescrivit une alimentation substantielle. 10. Nos vaches ont été traitées ce matin.

B.—1. Do we not write legibly? 2. They wrote to their parents that they were without money. 3. Your letter was so badly written that I could not read it. 4. You (*sing.*) must describe to me your journey in (*au*) Canada. 5. Am I following the good road, or have I strayed? 6. Let us always follow the path of virtue. 7. If we followed the voice of wisdom, how many (*que de*) faults we should avoid! 8. You must milk the cow before dinner. 9. They laughed when this disaster was announced to them. 10. Did you not laugh? No, I simply smiled.

LESSON 69.

*Learn the verbs suffire (§ 340), confire (§ 341), * dire (§ 342), maudire (§ 343).*

EXERCISE 69.

A.—1. Nous vivons heureux parce que nous suffisons à nos besoins. 2. Notre père voulait que nous nous suffissions à nous-mêmes. 3. Cet avis leur suffira-t-il? 4. Ces fruits ont été confits dans le sucre. 5. Confisez-vous des cornichons ou des piments? 6. Il m'a suffi de le voir pour le juger. 7. À chaque jour suffit sa peine. 8. Faut-il qu'un père maudisse son propre fils! 9. À la fin il s'est dédit. 10. Que me dites-vous là? j'en suis tout abasourdi.

B.—1. Cursed be (*soit*) war and its horrors! 2. Would you wish her to curse the day when (*où*) she first saw you? 3. Do you wish us to preserve some quinces? 4. The pastry-cook preserved his cherries in syrup. 5. We were told that you would not go to the lecture. 6. You must tell them that they are not right. 7. He has contradicted me. 8. His salary is not sufficient to support his family. 9. "Give," said the poor orphan; "a little suffices for me." 10. A hundred francs will not be enough for you to make that journey.

LESSON 70.

Learn the verbs faire (§ 344), prendre (§ 345), mettre (§ 346), battre (§ 347).

NOTE.—**Faire**, followed by an infinitive active, is used causatively as the equivalent of *have* followed by a past participle, *e.g.* **je vais faire relier ces livres**, *I am going to have these books bound.*

EXERCISE 70.

A.—1. Chemin faisant, il me mit au courant de son projet. 2. Avez-vous déjà désappris ce que je vous ai appris? 3. Je ne comprends pas que vous paraissiez si surpris. 4. Faites faire vos habits chez mon tailleur. 5. Faites à autrui ce que vous voudriez qu'on vous fit à vous-mêmes. 6. "Caïn, qu'as-tu fait de ton frère?" demanda le Seigneur. 7. Le soldat se bat avec courage, quand il

* Compounds of *dire*, except *redire*, have *-disez* in the second person plural of the present indicative, *e.g.* **vous médisez**.

combat pour la liberté de sa patrie. 8. Le maître ne permet pas que l'on mette ses livres devant soi. 9. En émettant cette théorie, vous avez compromis votre cause. 10. Les actions de cette compagnie ont été émises à quatre cents francs.

B.—1. I have transmitted to her the letter which you had delivered to me. 2. We will only admit those who submit (*fut.*) to our rules. 3. The farmer threshes his wheat in the barn. 4. After having argued he lowered his claims a little. 5. The Greek army has been beaten and put to (*en*) rout. 6. Did you not do well to undertake this journey. 7. We will do everything that you wish (*fut.*) us to do. 8. Would you not do it with pleasure if you could? 9. Must I take my stick or my umbrella? 10. In undertaking too much one arrives at nothing.

THE FOUR REGULAR CONJUGATIONS.

§ 232. French verbs are divided into four conjugations according to the endings of the infinitive, which are (1) **-er**, (2) **-ir**, (3) **-oir**, (4) **-re**.

§ 233. From the five principal parts of a French verb all the other parts may be formed. The principal parts are (1) the present infinitive; (2) the present participle stem, *i.e.* the stem left after cutting off the ending **-ant**; (3) the past participle; (4) the present indicative (first person singular); (5) the past definite indicative (first person singular).

§ 234. The various parts of a verb are thus formed, with the addition of the suffixes shown in the paradigms.

INDICATIVE.	Formed from	To form the first person add
Present, 2nd and 3rd pers. sing.	present indicative (1st sing.)	
„ plural	present participle stem	-ons
Imperfect	„ „	-ais
Past definite (throughout)	past definite (1st sing.)	
Future	infinitive	-ai
SUBJUNCTIVE.		
Present (except in the 3rd conj.)	present participle stem	-e
Imperfect	past definite (2nd sing.)	-se
CONDITIONAL, present	infinitive	-ais
IMPERATIVE, present (except 3rd person)	present indicative	

NOTE.—In forming the **future indicative** and **present conditional** from the infinitive, **oi** must be dropped in the case of verbs of the third conjugation and **e** in the case of verbs of the fourth.

§ 235. CONJUGATION OF AVOIR, TO HAVE.

PRINCIPAL PARTS: *av-oir, ay-ant, eu, j'ai, j'eu-s.

INFINITIVE, PRESENT: **av-oir**,
*to have*PARTICIPLE, PRESENT: **ay-ant**,
*having*INFINITIVE, PERFECT: **avoir**
eu, *to have had*PARTICIPLE, PERFECT: **ayant**
eu, *having had*PARTICIPLE, PAST (PASSIVE): **eu**, *had*

INDICATIVE MOOD.

PRESENT.

j' ai, *I have*
 tu as, *thou hast*
 il a, elle a, *he (or she) has*
 nous av-ons, *we have*
 vous av-ez, *you have*
 ils ont, elles ont, *they have*

IMPERFECT.

j' av-ais, *I had*
 tu av-ais, *thou hadst*
 il ꝑ av-ait, *he had*
 nous av-ions, *we had*
 vous av-iez, *you had*
 ils ꝑ av-aient, *they had*

PAST DEFINITE.

j' eu-s, *I had*
 tu eu-s, *thou hadst*
 il eu-t, *he had*
 nous eû-mes, *we had*
 vous eû-tes, *you had*
 ils eu-rent, *they had*

FUTURE.

j' aur-ai, *I shall have*
 tu aur-as, *thou wilt have*
 il aur-a, *he will have*
 nous aur-ons, *we shall have*
 vous aur-ez, *you will have*
 ils aur-ont, *they will have*

PAST INDEFINITE.

j'ai eu, *I have*
 tu as eu, *thou hast*
 il a eu, elle a eu, *he (or she) has*
 nous avons eu, *we have*
 vous avez eu, *you have*
 ils ont eu, elles ont eu, *they have*

PLUPERFECT.

j'avais eu, *I had*
 tu avais eu, *thou hadst*
 il avait eu, *he had*
 nous avions eu, *we had*
 vous aviez eu, *you had*
 ils avaient eu, *they had*

PAST ANTERIOR.

j'eus eu, *I had*
 tu eus eu, *thou hadst*
 il eut eu, *he had*
 nous eûmes eu, *we had*
 vous eûtes eu, *you had*
 ils eurent eu, *they had*

FUTURE PERFECT.

j'aurai eu, *I shall*
 tu auras eu, *thou wilt*
 il aura eu, *he will*
 nous aurons eu, *we shall*
 vous aurez eu, *you will*
 ils auront eu, *they will*

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

PRESENT.

(que) j' ai-e,	(that) I may	} have
(que) tu ai-es,	(that) thou mayst	
(qu') il ai-t,	(that) he may	
(que) nous ay-ons,	(that) we may	
(que) vous ay-ez,	(that) you may	
(qu') ils ai-ent,	(that) they may	

PAST INDEFINITE.

(que) j' ai-eu,	(that) I may	} have had
(que) tu aies eu,	(that) thou mayst	
(qu') il ait eu,	(that) he may	
(que) nous ayons eu,	(that) we may	
(que) vous ayez eu,	(that) you may	
(qu') ils aient eu,	(that) they may	

IMPERFECT.

(que) j' eu-sse,	(that) I might	} have
(que) tu eu-sSES,	(that) thou mightest	
(qu') il eût-t,	(that) he might	
(que) nous eu-ssions,	(that) we might	
(que) vous eu-ssiez,	(that) you might	
(qu') ils eu-ssent,	(that) they might	

PLUPERFECT.

(que) j' eusse eu,	(that) I might	} have had
(que) tu eusses eu,	(that) thou mightest	
(qu') il eût eu,	(that) he might	
(que) nous eussions eu,	(that) we might	
(que) vous eussiez eu,	(that) you might	
(qu') ils eussent eu,	(that) they might	

CONDITIONAL MOOD.

PRESENT.

j' aur-ais,	I should	} have
tu aur-ais,	thou wouldst	
il aur-ait,	he would	
nous aur-ions,	we should	
vous aur-iez,	you would	
ils aur-aient,	they would	

PERFECT.

j' aurais eu,	I should	} have had
tu aurais eu,	thou wouldst	
il aurait eu,	he would	
nous aurions eu,	we should	
vous auriez eu,	you would	
ils auraient eu,	they would	

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

PRESENT.

ai-e,	have	ay-ons,	let us have
(qu'il ai-t),	let him have	ay-ez,	have
		(qu'ils ai-ent),	let them have

NOTE.—In the following expressions the verb *avoir*, *to have*, followed by a substantive, is rendered in English by the verb *to be*, followed by an adjective or adjectival phrase :—

avoir faim,	to be hungry	avoir raison,	to be right
avoir soif,	to be thirsty	avoir tort,	to be wrong
avoir chaud,	to be warm	avoir peur,	to be afraid
avoir froid,	to be cold	avoir sommeil,	to be sleepy

§ 236. CONJUGATION OF ÊTRE, TO BE.

PRINCIPAL PARTS : être, été, je suis, je fu-s.

INFINITIVE, PRESENT : être, <i>to be</i>	INFINITIVE, PERFECT : avoir été, <i>to have been</i>
PARTICIPLE, PRESENT : étant, <i>being</i>	PARTICIPLE, PERFECT : ayant été, <i>having been</i>
PARTICIPLE, PAST : été (invariable), <i>been</i>	

INDICATIVE MOOD

PRESENT.		PAST INDEFINITE.	
je suis,	<i>I am</i>	j'ai été,	<i>I have</i>
tu es,	<i>thou art</i>	tu as été,	<i>thou hast</i>
il est,	<i>he is</i>	il a été,	<i>he has</i>
nous sommes,	<i>we are</i>	nous avons été,	<i>we have</i>
vous êtes,	<i>you are</i>	vous avez été,	<i>you have</i>
ils sont,	<i>they are</i>	ils ont été,	<i>they have</i>
		} <i>been</i>	
IMPERFECT.		PLUPERFECT.	
j' ét-ais,	<i>I was</i>	j'avais été,	<i>I had</i>
tu ét-ais,	<i>thou wast</i>	tu avais été,	<i>thou hadst</i>
il ét-ait,	<i>he was</i>	il avait été,	<i>he had</i>
nous ét-ions,	<i>we were</i>	nous avions été,	<i>we had</i>
vous ét-iez,	<i>you were</i>	vous aviez été,	<i>you had</i>
ils ét-aient,	<i>they were</i>	ils avaient été,	<i>they had</i>
		} <i>been</i>	
PAST DEFINITE.		PAST ANTERIOR.	
je fu-s,	<i>I was</i>	j'eus été,	<i>I had</i>
tu fu-s,	<i>thou wast</i>	tu eus été,	<i>thou hadst</i>
il fu-t,	<i>he was</i>	il eut été,	<i>he had</i>
nous fû-mes,	<i>we were</i>	nous eûmes été,	<i>we had</i>
vous fû-tes,	<i>you were</i>	vous eûtes été,	<i>you had</i>
ils fu-rent,	<i>they were</i>	ils eurent été,	<i>they had</i>
		} <i>been</i>	
FUTURE.		FUTURE PERFECT.	
je ser-ai,	<i>I shall be</i>	j'aurai été,	<i>I shall</i>
tu ser-as,	<i>thou wilt be</i>	tu auras été,	<i>thou wilt</i>
il ser-a,	<i>he will be</i>	il aura été,	<i>he will</i>
nous ser-ons,	<i>we shall be</i>	nous aurons été,	<i>we shall</i>
vous ser-ez,	<i>you will be</i>	vous aurez été,	<i>you will</i>
ils ser-ont,	<i>they will be</i>	ils auront été,	<i>they will</i>
		} <i>have been</i>	

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

PRESENT.			PAST INDEFINITE.		
(que) je soi-s ,	(that) <i>I</i>	} <i>be</i>	(que) j' aie été,	(that) <i>I</i>	} <i>have been</i>
(que) tu soi-s ,	(that) <i>thou</i>		(que) tu aies été,	(that) <i>thou</i>	
(qu') il soi-t ,	(that) <i>he</i>		(qu') il ait été,	(that) <i>he</i>	
(que) nous soy-ons ,	(that) <i>we</i>		(que) nous ayons	(that) <i>we</i>	
(que) vous soy-ez ,	(that) <i>you</i>		été,	(that) <i>you</i>	
(qu') ils soi-ent ,	(that) <i>they</i>		été,	(that) <i>they</i>	
	<i>may</i>			<i>may</i>	
IMPERFECT.			PLUPERFECT.		
(que) je fu-sse ,	(that) <i>I</i>	} <i>be</i>	(que) j' eusse été,	(that) <i>I</i>	} <i>have been</i>
(que) tu fu-sse-s ,	(that) <i>thou</i>		(que) tu eusses	(that) <i>thou</i>	
(qu') il fû-t ,	(that) <i>he</i>		été,	(that) <i>he</i>	
(que) nous fu-ssions ,	(that) <i>we</i>		(que) nous eussions	(that) <i>we</i>	
(que) vous fu-ssiez ,	(that) <i>you</i>		été,	(that) <i>you</i>	
(qu') ils fu-ssent ,	(that) <i>they</i>		été,	(that) <i>they</i>	
	<i>might</i>			<i>might</i>	

CONDITIONAL MOOD.

PRESENT.			PERFECT.		
je ser-ais ,	<i>I should</i>	} <i>be</i>	j' aurais été,	<i>I should</i>	} <i>have been</i>
tu ser-ais ,	<i>thou wouldst</i>		tu aurais été,	<i>thou wouldst</i>	
il ser-ait ,	<i>he would</i>		il aurait été,	<i>he would</i>	
nous ser-ions ,	<i>we should</i>		nous aurions été,	<i>we should</i>	
vous ser-iez ,	<i>you would</i>		vous auriez été,	<i>you would</i>	
ils ser-aient ,	<i>they would</i>		ils auraient été,	<i>they would</i>	

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

PRESENT.		
soi-s ,	<i>be</i>	soy-ons ,
(qu'il soi-t),	<i>let him be</i>	soy-ez ,
		(qu'ils soi-ent),
		<i>let them be</i>

NOTE.— The verb **être** is used as an auxiliary —

(a) in the conjugation of the passive voice ;

(b) in the compound tenses of certain intransitive verbs ;

(c) in the compound tenses of reflexive verbs ;

§ 237. FIRST CONJUGATION (INFINITIVE IN -ER).

MODEL : porter, *to carry*.PRINCIPAL PARTS : port-er, port-ant, port-é, je port-e,
je port-ai.INFINITIVE, PRESENT : port-er,
*to carry*INFINITIVE, PERFECT : avoir
porté, *to have carried*PARTICIPLE, PRESENT : port-ant,
*carrying*PARTICIPLE, PERFECT : ayant
porté, *having carried*PARTICIPLE, PAST (PASSIVE) : port-é, *carried*

INDICATIVE MOOD.

PRESENT.

je port-e,	<i>I carry</i>
tu port-es,	<i>thou carriest</i>
il port-e,	<i>he carries</i>
nous port-ons,	<i>we carry</i>
vous port-ez,	<i>you carry</i>
ils port-ent,	<i>they carry</i>

IMPERFECT.

je port-ais,	<i>I was</i>
tu port-ais,	<i>thou wast</i>
il port-ait,	<i>he was</i>
nous port-ions,	<i>we were</i>
vous port-iez,	<i>you were</i>
ils port-aient,	<i>they were</i>

PAST DEFINITE.

je port-ai,	<i>I carried</i>
tu port-as,	<i>thou carriedst</i>
il port-a,	<i>he carried</i>
nous port-âmes,	<i>we carried</i>
vous port-âtes,	<i>you carried</i>
ils port-èrent,	<i>they carried</i>

FUTURE.

je port-er-ai,	<i>I shall carry</i>
tu port-er-as,	<i>thou wilt carry</i>
il port-er-a,	<i>he will carry</i>
nous port-er-ons,	<i>we shall carry</i>
vous port-er-ez,	<i>you will carry</i>
ils port-er-ont,	<i>they will carry</i>

PAST INDEFINITE.

j'ai porté,	<i>I have</i>
tu as porté,	<i>thou hast</i>
il a porté,	<i>he has</i>
nous avons porté,	<i>we have</i>
vous avez porté,	<i>you have</i>
ils ont porté,	<i>they have</i>

PLUPERFECT.

j'avais porté,	<i>I had</i>
tu avais porté,	<i>thou hadst</i>
il avait porté,	<i>he had</i>
nous avions porté,	<i>we had</i>
vous aviez porté,	<i>you had</i>
ils avaient porté,	<i>they had</i>

PAST ANTERIOR.

j'eus porté,	<i>I had</i>
tu eus porté,	<i>thou hadst</i>
il eut porté,	<i>he had</i>
nous eûmes porté,	<i>we had</i>
vous eûtes porté,	<i>you had</i>
ils eurent porté,	<i>they had</i>

FUTURE PERFECT.

j'aurai porté,	<i>I shall</i>
tu auras porté,	<i>thou wilt</i>
il aura porté,	<i>he will</i>
nous aurons porté,	<i>we shall</i>
vous aurez porté,	<i>you will</i>
ils auront porté,	<i>they will</i>

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

PRESENT.		PAST INDEFINITE.	
je port-e,	<i>I may</i>	j'aie porté,	<i>I may</i>
tu port-es,	<i>thou mayst</i>	tu aies porté,	<i>thou mayst</i>
il port-e,	<i>he may</i>	il ait porté,	<i>he may</i>
nous port-ions,	<i>we may</i>	nous ayons porté,	<i>we may</i>
vous port-iez,	<i>you may</i>	vous ayez porté,	<i>you may</i>
ils port-ent,	<i>they may</i>	ils aient porté,	<i>they may</i>
IMPERFECT.		PLUPERFECT.	
je port-asse,	<i>I might</i>	j'eusse porté,	<i>I might</i>
tu port-asses,	<i>thou mightest</i>	tu eusses porté,	<i>thou mightest</i>
il port-ât,	<i>he might</i>	il eût porté,	<i>he might</i>
nous port-ussions,	<i>we might</i>	nous eussions porté,	<i>we might</i>
vous port-ussiez,	<i>you might</i>	vous eussiez porté,	<i>you might</i>
ils port-assent,	<i>they might</i>	ils eussent porté,	<i>they might</i>

CONDITIONAL MOOD.

PRESENT.		PERFECT.	
je port-er-ais,	<i>I should</i>	j'aurais porté,	<i>I should</i>
tu port-er-ais,	<i>thou wouldst</i>	tu aurais porté,	<i>thou wouldst</i>
il port-er-ait,	<i>he would</i>	il aurait porté,	<i>he would</i>
nous port-er-ions,	<i>we should</i>	nous aurions porté,	<i>we should</i>
vous port-er-iez,	<i>you would</i>	vous auriez porté,	<i>you would</i>
ils port-er-aient,	<i>they would</i>	ils auraient porté,	<i>they would</i>

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

PRESENT.

port-e,	<i>carry</i>
(qu'il port-e),	<i>let him carry</i>
port-ons,	<i>let us carry</i>
port-ez,	<i>carry</i>
(qu'ils port-ent),	<i>let them carry</i>

NOTE 1.—This conjugation, which corresponds to the Latin first conjugation (infinitive in *-are*), comprises at least seven-eighths of the verbs in the language. Verbs of modern formation, with very few exceptions, fall into this class; *e.g.* *macadamiser*, to *macadamize* (from Macadam, who introduced the method of paving roads with broken granite), *télégraphier*, to *telegraph*, etc.

NOTE 2.—There are only two irregular verbs in *-er* (*aller* and *envoyer*, §§ 281, 282). For anomalies of spelling in some verbs of this conjugation, see §§ 255–275.

§ 238. SECOND CONJUGATION (INFINITIVE IN -IR).

MODEL : finir, *to finish*.

PRINCIPAL PARTS : fin-ir, fin-iss-ant, fin-i, je fin-is, je fin-is.

INFINITIVE, PRESENT : fin-ir,
*to finish*INFINITIVE, PERFECT : avoir
fini, *to have finished*PARTICIPLE, PRESENT : fin-iss-
ant, *finishing*PARTICIPLE, PERFECT : ayant
fini, *having finished*PARTICIPLE, PAST (PASSIVE) : fin-i, *finished*

INDICATIVE MOOD.

PRESENT.

je fin-is,	<i>I finish</i>
tu fin-is,	<i>thou finishest</i>
il fin-it,	<i>he finishes</i>
nous fin-iss-ons,	<i>we finish</i>
vous fin-iss-ez,	<i>you finish</i>
ils fin-iss-ent,	<i>they finish</i>

PAST INDEFINITE.

j'ai fini,	<i>I have</i>	} <i>finished</i>
tu as fini,	<i>thou hast</i>	
il a fini,	<i>he has</i>	
nous avons fini,	<i>we have</i>	
vous avez fini,	<i>you have</i>	
ils ont fini,	<i>they have</i>	

IMPERFECT.

je fin-iss-ais,	<i>I was</i>	} <i>finishing</i>
tu fin-iss-ais,	<i>thou wast</i>	
il fin-iss-ait,	<i>he was</i>	
nous fin-iss-ions,	<i>we were</i>	
vous fin-iss-iez,	<i>you were</i>	
ils fin-iss-aient,	<i>they were</i>	

PLUPERFECT.

j'avais fini,	<i>I had</i>	} <i>finished</i>
tu avais fini,	<i>thou hadst</i>	
il avait fini,	<i>he had</i>	
nous avions fini,	<i>we had</i>	
vous aviez fini,	<i>you had</i>	
ils avaient fini,	<i>they had</i>	

PAST DEFINITE.

je fin-is,	<i>I finished</i>
tu fin-is,	<i>thou finishedst</i>
il fin-it,	<i>he finished</i>
nous fin-îmes,	<i>we finished</i>
vous fin-îtes,	<i>you finished</i>
ils fin-irent,	<i>they finished</i>

PAST ANTERIOR.

j'eus fini,	<i>I had</i>	} <i>finished</i>
tu eus fini,	<i>thou hadst</i>	
il eut fini,	<i>he had</i>	
nous eûmes fini,	<i>we had</i>	
vous eûtes fini,	<i>you had</i>	
ils eurent fini,	<i>they had</i>	

FUTURE.

je fin-ir-ai,	<i>I shall finish</i>
tu fin-ir-as,	<i>thou wilt finish</i>
il fin-ir-a,	<i>he will finish</i>
nous fin-ir-ons,	<i>we shall finish</i>
vous fin-ir-ez,	<i>you will finish</i>
ils fin-ir-ont,	<i>they will finish</i>

FUTURE PERFECT.

j'aurai fini,	<i>I shall</i>	} <i>have finished</i>
tu auras fini,	<i>thou wilt</i>	
il aura fini,	<i>he will</i>	
nous aurons fini,	<i>we shall</i>	
vous aurez fini,	<i>you will</i>	
ils auront fini,	<i>they will</i>	

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

PRESENT.		PAST INDEFINITE.	
je fin-iss-e ,	<i>I may</i>	j' aie fini ,	<i>I may</i>
tu fin-iss-es ,	<i>thou mayst</i>	tu aies fini,	<i>thou mayst</i>
il fin-iss-e ,	<i>he may</i>	il ait fini,	<i>he may</i>
nous fin-iss-ions ,	<i>we may</i>	nous ayons fini,	<i>we may</i>
vous fin-iss-iez ,	<i>you may</i>	vous ayez fini,	<i>you may</i>
ils fin-iss-ent ,	<i>they may</i>	ils aient fini,	<i>they may</i>
IMPERFECT.		PLUPERFECT.	
je fin-isse ,	<i>I might</i>	j' eusse fini ,	<i>I might</i>
tu fin-isses ,	<i>thou mightest</i>	tu eusses fini,	<i>thou mightest</i>
il fin-ît ,	<i>he might</i>	il eût fini,	<i>he might</i>
nous fin-issions ,	<i>we might</i>	nous eussions fini,	<i>we might</i>
vous fin-issiez ,	<i>you might</i>	vous eussiez fini,	<i>you might</i>
ils fin-issent ,	<i>they might</i>	ils eussent fini,	<i>they might</i>

CONDITIONAL MOOD.

PRESENT.		PERFECT.	
je fin-ir-ais ,	<i>I should</i>	j' aurais fini ,	<i>I should</i>
tu fin-ir-ais ,	<i>thou wouldst</i>	tu aurais fini,	<i>thou wouldst</i>
il fin-ir-ait ,	<i>he would</i>	il aurait fini,	<i>he would</i>
nous fin-ir-ions ,	<i>we should</i>	nous aurions fini,	<i>we should</i>
vous fin-ir-iez ,	<i>you would</i>	vous auriez fini,	<i>you would</i>
ils fin-ir-aient ,	<i>they would</i>	ils auraient fini,	<i>they would</i>

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

PRESENT.

fin-is ,	<i>finish</i>
(qu'il fin-iss-e),	<i>let him finish</i>
fin-iss-ons ,	<i>let us finish</i>
fin-iss-ez ,	<i>finish</i>
(qu'ils fin-iss-ent),	<i>let them finish</i>

NOTE.—This conjugation, which corresponds to the Latin fourth conjugation (infinitive in **-ire**), comprises about 330 verbs, the majority of which follow the above model. The remainder, twenty-eight in number, lack the syllable **-iss-** (which has its origin in the **-isc-** of Latin inceptive verbs), and are accordingly classed as irregular (§§ 283–300).

§ 239. THIRD CONJUGATION (INFINITIVE IN -OIR).

MODEL : recevoir, *to receive*.

PRINCIPAL PARTS : recev-oir, recev-ant, reç-u, je reçois, je reç-us.

INFINITIVE, PRESENT : recev-oir,
to receive

INFINITIVE, PERFECT : avoir
reçu, *to have received*

PARTICIPLE, PRESENT : recev-
ant, *receiving*

PARTICIPLE, PERFECT : ayant
reçu, *having received*

PARTICIPLE, PAST (PASSIVE) : reç-u, *received*

INDICATIVE MOOD.

PRESENT.

je reçois,	<i>I receive</i>
tu reçois,	<i>thou receivest</i>
il reçoit,	<i>he receives</i>
nous recev-ons,	<i>we receive</i>
vous recev-ez,	<i>you receive</i>
ils reçoivent,	<i>they receive</i>

PAST INDEFINITE.

j'ai reçu,	<i>I have</i>	}
tu as reçu,	<i>thou hast</i>	
il a reçu,	<i>he has</i>	
nous avons reçu,	<i>we have</i>	
vous avez reçu,	<i>you have</i>	
ils ont reçu,	<i>they have</i>	

IMPERFECT.

je recevais,	<i>I was</i>	}
tu recevais,	<i>thou wast</i>	
il recevait,	<i>he was</i>	
nous recev-ions,	<i>we were</i>	
vous recev-iez,	<i>you were</i>	
ils recevaient,	<i>they were</i>	

PLUPERFECT.

j'avais reçu,	<i>I had</i>	}
tu avais reçu,	<i>thou hadst</i>	
il avait reçu,	<i>he had</i>	
nous avions reçu,	<i>we had</i>	
vous aviez reçu,	<i>you had</i>	
ils avaient reçu,	<i>they had</i>	

PAST DEFINITE.

je reç-us,	<i>I received</i>
tu reç-us,	<i>thou receivedst</i>
il reç-ut,	<i>he received</i>
nous reç-ûmes,	<i>we received</i>
vous reç-ûtes,	<i>you received</i>
ils reç-urent,	<i>they received</i>

PAST ANTERIOR.

j'eus reçu,	<i>I had</i>	}
tu eus reçu,	<i>thou hadst</i>	
il eut reçu,	<i>he had</i>	
nous eûmes reçu,	<i>we had</i>	
vous eûtes reçu,	<i>you had</i>	
ils eurent reçu,	<i>they had</i>	

FUTURE.

je recev-r-ai,	<i>I shall</i>	}
tu recev-r-as,	<i>thou wilt</i>	
il recev-r-a,	<i>he will</i>	
nous recev-r-ons,	<i>we shall</i>	
vous recev-r-ez,	<i>you will</i>	
ils recev-r-ont,	<i>they will</i>	

FUTURE PERFECT.

j'aurai reçu,	<i>I shall</i>	}
tu auras reçu,	<i>thou wilt</i>	
il aura reçu,	<i>he will</i>	
nous aurons reçu,	<i>we shall</i>	
vous aurez reçu,	<i>you will</i>	
ils auront reçu,	<i>they will</i>	

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

PRESENT.		PAST INDEFINITE.	
je reçoiv-e,	<i>I may</i>	j'aie reçu,	<i>I may</i>
tu reçoiv-es,	<i>thou mayst</i>	tu aies reçu,	<i>thou mayst</i>
il reçoiv-e,	<i>he may</i>	il ait reçu,	<i>he may</i>
nous recev-ions,	<i>we may</i>	nous ayons reçu,	<i>we may</i>
vous recev-iez,	<i>you may</i>	vous ayez reçu,	<i>you may</i>
ils reçoiv-ent,	<i>they may</i>	ils aient reçu,	<i>they may</i>
IMPERFECT.		PLUPERFECT.	
je reç-usse,	<i>I might</i>	j'eusse reçu,	<i>I might</i>
tu reç-usses,	<i>thou mightest</i>	tu eusses reçu,	<i>thou mightest</i>
il reç-ût,	<i>he might</i>	il eût reçu,	<i>he might</i>
nous reç-ussions,	<i>we might</i>	nous eussions reçu,	<i>we might</i>
vous reç-ussiez,	<i>you might</i>	vous eussiez reçu,	<i>you might</i>
ils reç-ussent,	<i>they might</i>	ils eussent reçu,	<i>they might</i>

CONDITIONAL MOOD.

PRESENT.		PERFECT.	
je recev-r-ais,	<i>I should</i>	j'aurais reçu,	<i>I should</i>
tu recev-r-ais,	<i>thou wouldst</i>	tu aurais reçu,	<i>thou wouldst</i>
il recev-r-ait,	<i>he would</i>	il aurait reçu,	<i>he would</i>
nous recev-r-ions,	<i>we should</i>	nous aurions reçu,	<i>we should</i>
vous recev-r-iez,	<i>you would</i>	vous auriez reçu,	<i>you would</i>
ils recev-r-aient,	<i>they would</i>	ils auraient reçu,	<i>they would</i>

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

PRESENT.

reçois,	<i>receive</i>
(qu'il reçoiv-e),	<i>let him receive</i>
recev-ons,	<i>let us receive</i>
recev-ez,	<i>receive</i>
(qu'ils reçoiv-ent),	<i>let them receive</i>

NOTE 1.—This conjugation, which corresponds to the Latin second conjugation (infinitive in *-ēre*), comprises about twenty verbs, all of which are more or less irregular (§§ 301—312). Like *recevoir* are conjugated about half a dozen other verbs in *-cevoir*.

NOTE 2.—The cedilla is used in *recevoir* and other verbs ending in *-cevoir* whenever the *c* is followed by *o* or *u*; by this means the soft sound of the *c* is preserved.

§ 240. FOURTH CONJUGATION (INFINITIVE IN -RE).

MODEL : rompre, *to break*.

PRINCIPAL PARTS : romp-re, romp-ant, romp-u, je romp-s,
je romp-is.

INFINITIVE, PRESENT : romp-re,
to break

INFINITIVE, PERFECT : avoir
rompu, *to have broken*

PARTICIPLE, PRESENT : romp-
ant, *breaking*

PARTICIPLE, PERFECT : ayant
rompu, *having broken*

PARTICIPLE, PAST (PASSIVE) : rompu, *broken*

INDICATIVE MOOD.

PRESENT.

je romp-s,	<i>I break</i>
tu romp-s,	<i>thou breakest</i>
il romp-t,	<i>he breaks</i>
nous romp-ons,	<i>we break</i>
vous romp-ez,	<i>you break</i>
ils romp-ent,	<i>they break</i>

PAST INDEFINITE.

j'ai rompu,	<i>I have</i>	}	broken
tu as rompu,	<i>thou hast</i>		
il a rompu,	<i>he has</i>		
nous avons rompu,	<i>we have</i>		
vous avez rompu,	<i>you have</i>		
ils ont rompu,	<i>they have</i>		

IMPERFECT.

je romp-ais,	<i>I was</i>	}	breaking
tu romp-ais,	<i>thou wast</i>		
il romp-ait,	<i>he was</i>		
nous romp-ions,	<i>we were</i>		
vous romp-iez,	<i>you were</i>		
ils romp-aient,	<i>they were</i>		

PLUPERFECT.

j'avais rompu,	<i>I had</i>	}	broken
tu avais rompu,	<i>thou hadst</i>		
il avait rompu,	<i>he had</i>		
nous avions rompu,	<i>we had</i>		
vous aviez rompu,	<i>you had</i>		
ils avaient rompu,	<i>they had</i>		

PAST DEFINITE.

je romp-is,	<i>I broke</i>
tu romp-is,	<i>thou brokest</i>
il romp-it,	<i>he broke</i>
nous romp-îmes,	<i>we broke</i>
vous romp-îtes,	<i>you broke</i>
ils romp-irent,	<i>they broke</i>

PAST ANTERIOR.

j'eus rompu,	<i>I had</i>	}	broken
tu eus rompu,	<i>thou hadst</i>		
il eut rompu,	<i>he had</i>		
nous eûmes rompu,	<i>we had</i>		
vous eûtes rompu,	<i>you had</i>		
ils eurent rompu,	<i>they had</i>		

FUTURE.

je romp-r-ai,	<i>I shall break</i>
tu romp-r-as,	<i>thou wilt break</i>
il romp-r-a,	<i>he will break</i>
nous romp-r-ons,	<i>we shall break</i>
vous romp-r-ez,	<i>you will break</i>
ils romp-r-ont,	<i>they will break</i>

FUTURE PERFECT.

j'aurai rompu,	<i>I shall</i>	}	have broken
tu auras rompu,	<i>thou wilt</i>		
il aura rompu,	<i>he will</i>		
nous aurons rompu,	<i>we shall</i>		
vous aurez rompu,	<i>you will</i>		
ils auront rompu,	<i>they will</i>		

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

PRESENT.		PAST INDEFINITE.	
je rom p-e ,	<i>I may</i>	j'aie rom pu ,	<i>I may</i>
tu rom p-es ,	<i>thou mayst</i>	tu aies rom pu ,	<i>thou mayst</i>
il rom p-e ,	<i>he may</i>	il ait rom pu ,	<i>he may</i>
nous rom p-ions ,	<i>we may</i>	nous ayons rom pu ,	<i>we may</i>
vous rom p-iez ,	<i>you may</i>	vous ayez rom pu ,	<i>you may</i>
ils rom p-ent ,	<i>they may</i>	ils aient rom pu ,	<i>they may</i>
IMPERFECT.		PLUPERFECT.	
je rom p-isse ,	<i>I might</i>	j'eusse rom pu ,	<i>I might</i>
tu rom p-isses ,	<i>thou</i>	tu eusses rom pu ,	<i>thou</i>
	<i>mightest</i>		<i>mightest</i>
il rom p-ît ,	<i>he might</i>	il eût rom pu ,	<i>he might</i>
nous rom p-issions ,	<i>we might</i>	nous eussions rom pu ,	<i>we might</i>
vous rom p-issiez ,	<i>you might</i>	vous eussiez rom pu ,	<i>you might</i>
ils rom p-issent ,	<i>they might</i>	ils eussent rom pu ,	<i>they might</i>

CONDITIONAL MOOD.

PRESENT.		PERFECT.	
je rom p-r-ais ,	<i>I should</i>	j'aurais rom pu ,	<i>I should</i>
tu rom p-r-ais ,	<i>thou</i>	tu aurais rom pu ,	<i>thou</i>
	<i>wouldst</i>		<i>wouldst</i>
il rom p-r-ait ,	<i>he would</i>	il aurait rom pu ,	<i>he would</i>
nous rom p-r-ions ,	<i>we should</i>	nous aurions rom pu ,	<i>we should</i>
vous rom p-r-iez ,	<i>you would</i>	vous auriez rom pu ,	<i>you would</i>
ils rom p-r-aient ,	<i>they would</i>	ils auraient rom pu ,	<i>they would</i>

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

PRESENT.	
rom p-s ,	<i>break</i>
(qu'il rom p-e),	<i>let him break</i>
rom p-ons ,	<i>let us break</i>
rom p-ez ,	<i>break</i>
(qu'ils rom p-ent),	<i>let them break</i>

NOTE 1.—This conjugation, which corresponds to the Latin third conjugation (infinitive in *-ĕre*), comprises fifty verbs, of which about half follow the model above, the rest being irregular (§§ 313–348).

NOTE 2.—Verbs of which the stem ends in *-d* drop the *-t* in the third person singular of the present indicative; e.g. *il perd*, *he loses*, from *perd-re*, *to lose*.

§ 241. NEGATIVE CONJUGATION.

MODEL : ne pas obéir, *not to obey.*INFINITIVE, PRESENT : **ne pas obéir**, *not to obey*PARTICIPLE, PRESENT : **n'obéissant pas**, *not obeying*INFINITIVE, PERFECT : **n'avoir pas obéi**, *not to have obeyed*PARTICIPLE, PERFECT : **n'ayant pas obéi**, *not having obeyed*

INDICATIVE MOOD.

PRESENT.

(I do not obey.)

je **n'obéis pas**
 tu **n'obéis pas**
 il **n'obéit pas**
 nous **n'obéissons pas**
 vous **n'obéissez pas**
 ils **n'obéissent pas**

IMPERFECT.

(I was not obeying.)

je **n'obéissais pas**
 tu **n'obéissais pas**
 il **n'obéissait pas**
 nous **n'obéissions pas**
 vous **n'obéissiez pas**
 ils **n'obéissaient pas**

PAST DEFINITE.

(I did not obey.)

je **n'obéis pas**
 tu **n'obéis pas**
 il **n'obéit pas**
 nous **n'obéîmes pas**
 vous **n'obéîtes pas**
 ils **n'obéirent pas**

FUTURE.

(I shall not obey.)

je **n'obéirai pas**
 tu **n'obéiras pas**
 il **n'obéira pas**
 nous **n'obéirons pas**
 vous **n'obéirez pas**
 ils **n'obéiront pas**

PAST INDEFINITE.

(I have not obeyed.)

je **n'ai pas obéi**
 tu **n'as pas obéi**
 il **n'a pas obéi**
 nous **n'avons pas obéi**
 vous **n'avez pas obéi**
 ils **n'ont pas obéi**

PLUPERFECT.

(I had not obeyed.)

je **n'avais pas obéi**
 tu **n'avais pas obéi**
 il **n'avait pas obéi**
 nous **n'avions pas obéi**
 vous **n'aviez pas obéi**
 ils **n'avaient pas obéi**

PAST ANTERIOR.

(I had not obeyed.)

je **n'eus pas obéi**
 tu **n'eus pas obéi**
 il **n'eut pas obéi**
 nous **n'eûmes pas obéi**
 vous **n'eûtes pas obéi**
 ils **n'eurent pas obéi**

FUTURE PERFECT.

(I shall not have obeyed.)

je **n'aurai pas obéi**
 tu **n'auras pas obéi**
 il **n'aura pas obéi**
 nous **n'aurons pas obéi**
 vous **n'aurez pas obéi**
 ils **n'auront pas obéi**

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

PRESENT.

• (*I may not obey.*)

je n'obéis^{se} pas
tu n'obéiss^{es} pas
il n'obéis^{se} pas

nous n'obéiss^{ions} pas
vous n'obéiss^{iez} pas
ils n'obéiss^{ent} pas

IMPERFECT.

(*I might not obey.*)

je n'obéis^{se} pas
tu n'obéiss^{es} pas
il n'obéiss^{ait} pas

nous n'obéiss^{ions} pas
vous n'obéiss^{iez} pas
ils n'obéiss^{ent} pas

PAST INDEFINITE.

(*I may not have obeyed.*)

je n'obéiss^{ais} pas
tu n'obéiss^{ais} pas
il n'obéiss^{ait} pas

nous n'obéiss^{ions} pas
vous n'obéiss^{iez} pas
ils n'obéiss^{ent} pas

PLUPERFECT.

(*I might not have obeyed.*)

je n'obéiss^{ais} pas
tu n'obéiss^{ais} pas
il n'obéiss^{ait} pas

nous n'obéiss^{ions} pas
vous n'obéiss^{iez} pas
ils n'obéiss^{ent} pas

CONDITIONAL MOOD.

PRESENT.

(*I should not obey.*)

je n'obéir^{ais} pas
tu n'obéir^{ais} pas
il n'obéir^{ait} pas

nous n'obéir^{ions} pas
vous n'obéir^{iez} pas
ils n'obéir^{aient} pas

PERFECT.

(*I should not have obeyed.*)

je n'obéir^{ais} pas
tu n'obéir^{ais} pas
il n'obéir^{ait} pas

nous n'obéir^{ions} pas
vous n'obéir^{iez} pas
ils n'obéir^{aient} pas

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

PRESENT.

n'obéis pas, *obey not*
(qu'il n'obéis^{se} pas), *let him not obey*

n'obéiss^{ons} pas, *let us not obey*
n'obéiss^{ez} pas, *do not obey*
(qu'ils n'obéiss^{ent} pas), *let them not obey*

§ 242. INTERROGATIVE CONJUGATION.

MODEL: chanter, *to sing*.

INDICATIVE MOOD.

PRESENT.

***chanté-je ?** *do I sing ?*
chantes-tu ? *singest thou ?*
chante-t-il ? *does he sing ?*
chantons-nous ? *do we sing ?*
chantez-vous ? *do you sing ?*
chantent-ils ? *do they sing ?*

IMPERFECT.

(Was I singing ?)

chantais-je ?
chantais-tu ?
chantait-il ?
chantions-nous ?
chantiez-vous ?
chantaient-ils ?

PAST DEFINITE.

(Did I sing ?)

chantai-je ?
chantas-tu ?
chanta-t-il ?
chantâmes-nous ?
chantâtes-vous ?
chantèrent-ils ?

FUTURE.

(Shall I sing ?)

chanterai-je ?
chanteras-tu ?
chantera-t-il ?
chanterons-nous ?
chanterez-vous ?
chanteront-ils ?

PAST INDEFINITE.

ai-je chanté ? *have I sung ?*
as-tu chanté ? *hast thou sung ?*
a-t-il chanté ? *has he sung ?*
avons-nous chanté ? *have we sung ?*
avez-vous chanté ? *have you sung ?*
ont-ils chanté ? *have they sung ?*

PLUPERFECT.

(Had I sung ?)

avais-je chanté ?
avais-tu chanté ?
avait-il chanté ?
avions-nous chanté ?
aviez-vous chanté ?
avaient-ils chanté ?

PAST ANTERIOR.

(Had I sung ?)

eus-je chanté ?
eus-tu chanté ?
eut-il chanté ?
eûmes-nous chanté ?
eûtes-vous chanté ?
eurent-ils chanté ?

FUTURE PERFECT.

(Shall I have sung ?)

aurai-je chanté ?
auras-tu chanté ?
aura-t-il chanté ?
aurons-nous chanté ?
aurez-vous chanté ?
aurent-ils chanté ?

CONDITIONAL MOOD.

PRESENT.

(Should I sing ?)

chanterais-je ?
chanterais-tu ?
chanterait-il ?
chanterions-nous ?
chanteriez-vous ?
chanteraient-ils ?

PERFECT.

(Should I have sung ?)

aurais-je chanté ?
aurais-tu chanté ?
aurait-il chanté ?
aurions-nous chanté ?
auriez-vous chanté ?
auraient-ils chanté ?

* Rarely used.

§ 243. NEGATIVE-INTERROGATIVE CONJUGATION

MODEL: agir, to act.

INDICATIVE MOOD.

PRESENT.

(Do I not act?)

n'agis-je pas? (rarely used)
 n'agis-tu pas?
 n'agit-il pas?
 n'agissons-nous pas?
 n'agissez-vous pas?
 n'agissent-ils pas?

IMPERFECT.

(Was I not acting?)

n'agissais-je pas?
 n'agissais-tu pas?
 n'agissait-il pas?
 n'agissions-nous pas?
 n'agissiez-vous pas?
 n'agissaient-ils pas?

PAST DEFINITE.

(Did I not act?)

n'agis-je pas?
 n'agis-tu pas?
 n'agit-il pas?
 n'agîmes-nous pas?
 n'agîtes-vous pas?
 n'agirent-ils pas?

FUTURE.

(Shall I not act?)

n'agirai-je pas?
 n'agiras-tu pas?
 n'agira-t-il pas?
 n'agirons-nous pas?
 n'agirez-vous pas?
 n'agiront-ils pas?

PAST INDEFINITE.

(Have I not acted?)

n'ai-je pas agi? (rarely used)
 n'as-tu pas agi?
 n'a-t-il pas agi?
 n'avons-nous pas agi?
 n'avez-vous pas agi?
 n'ont-ils pas agi?

PLUPERFECT.

(Had I not acted?)

n'avais-je pas agi?
 n'avais-tu pas agi?
 n'avait-il pas agi?
 n'avions-nous pas agi?
 n'aviez-vous pas agi?
 n'avaient-ils pas agi?

PAST ANTERIOR.

(Had I not acted?)

n'eus-je pas agi?
 n'eus-tu pas agi?
 n'eut-il pas agi?
 n'eûmes-nous pas agi?
 n'eûtes-vous pas agi?
 n'eurent-ils pas agi?

FUTURE PERFECT.

(Shall I not have acted?)

n'aurai-je pas agi?
 n'auras-tu pas agi?
 n'aura-t-il pas agi?
 n'aurons-nous pas agi?
 n'aurez-vous pas agi?
 n'auront-ils pas agi?

CONDITIONAL MOOD.

PRESENT.

(Should I not act?)

n'agirais-je pas?
 n'agirais-tu pas?
 n'agirait-il pas?
 n'agirions-nous pas?
 n'agiriez-vous pas?
 n'agiraient-ils pas?

PERFECT.

(Should I not have acted?)

n'aurais-je pas agi?
 n'aurais-tu pas agi?
 n'aurait-il pas agi?
 n'aurions-nous pas agi?
 n'auriez-vous pas agi?
 n'auraient-ils pas agi?

§ 244. CONJUGATION OF THE PASSIVE VOICE.

MODEL : être aimé, *to be loved.*INFINITIVE, PRESENT : être
aimé,* *to be loved*PARTICIPLE, PRESENT : étant
aimé,* *being loved*INFINITIVE, PERFECT : avoir
été aimé,* *to have been loved*PARTICIPLE, PERFECT : ayant
été aimé,* *having been loved*

INDICATIVE MOOD.

PRESENT.
(*I am loved.*)

je suis aimé or aimée
tu es aimé or aimée
il est aimé, elle est aimée
nous sommes aimés or aimées
vous êtes aimés or aimées
ils sont aimés
elles sont aimées

IMPERFECT. (*I was loved.*)

j'étais } aimé or
tu étais } aimée
il était aimé
elle était aimée
nous étions } aimés or
vous étiez } aimées
ils étaient aimés
elles étaient aimées

PAST DEFINITE.
(*I was loved.*)

je fus } aimé or
tu fus } aimée
il fut aimé, elle fut aimée
nous fûmes } aimés or
vous fûtes } aimées
ils furent aimés
elles furent aimées

FUTURE.
(*I shall be loved.*)

je serai } aimé or
tu seras } aimée
il sera aimé, elle sera aimée
nous serons } aimés or
vous serez } aimées
ils seront aimés
elles seront aimées

PAST INDEFINITE.
(*I have been loved.*)

j'ai été } aimé or
tu as été } aimée
il a été aimé, elle a été aimée
nous avons été } aimés or
vous avez été } aimées
ils ont été aimés
elles ont été aimées

PLUPERFECT. (*I had been loved.*)

j'avais été } aimé or
tu avais été } aimée
il avait été aimé
elle avait été aimée
nous avions été } aimés or
vous aviez été } aimées
ils avaient été aimés
elles avaient été aimées

PAST ANTERIOR.
(*I had been loved.*)

j'eus été } aimé or
tu eus été } aimée
il eut été aimé, elle eut été aimée
nous eûmes été } aimés or
vous eûtes été } aimées
ils eurent été aimés
elles eurent été aimées

FUTURE PERFECT.
(*I shall have been loved.*)

j'aurai été } aimé or
tu auras été } aimée
il aura été aimé, elle aura été aimée
nous aurons été } aimés or
vous aurez été } aimées
ils auront été aimés
elles auront été aimées

* Aimé is here variable : aimé, aimée, aimés or aimées.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

PRESENT.

(*I may be loved.*)

je sois } aimé or
tu sois } aimée
il soit aimé, elle soit aimée
nous soyons } aimés or
vous soyez } aimées
ils soient aimés
elles soient aimées

IMPERFECT.

(*I might be loved.*)

je fusse } aimé or
tu fusses } aimée
il fût aimé, elle fût aimée
nous fussions } aimés or
vous fussiez } aimées
ils fussent aimés
elles fussent aimées

PAST INDEFINITE.

(*I may have been loved.*)

j'aie été } aimé or
tu aies été } aimée
il ait été aimé, elle ait été aimée
nous ayons été } aimés or
vous ayez été } aimées
ils aient été aimés
elles aient été aimées

PLUPERFECT.

(*I might have been loved*)

j'eusse été } aimé or
tu eusses été } aimée
il eût été aimé, elle eût été aimée
nous eussions été } aimés or
vous eussiez été } aimées
ils eussent été aimés
elles eussent été aimées

CONDITIONAL MOOD.

PRESENT.

(*I should be loved.*)

je serais } aimé or
tu serais } aimée
il serait aimé
elle serait aimée
nous serions } aimés or
vous seriez } aimées
ils seraient aimés
elles seraient aimées

PERFECT.

(*I should have been loved.*)

j'aurais été } aimé or
tu aurais été } aimée
il aurait été aimé
elle aurait été aimée
nous aurions été } aimés or
vous auriez été } aimées
ils auraient été aimés
elles auraient été aimées

IMPERATIVE MOOD.—PRESENT.

sois aimé or aimés, *be loved*
(qu'il soit aimé), *let him be loved*
(qu'elle soit aimée), *let her be loved*
soyons aimés or aimés, *let us be loved*
soyez aimés or aimés, *be loved*
(qu'ils soient aimés, } *let them be loved*
(qu'elles soient aimées, }

NOTE 1.—The past participle *été* is invariable.

NOTE 2.—When the second person plural is used in addressing one person only, the past participle remains singular, but varies for gender; e.g. **Vous êtes aimée de tous, ma mère, You are beloved of all, mother.**

§ 245. EXAMPLE OF THE NEGATIVE CONJUGATION OF
THE PASSIVE VOICE.

N'être pas flatté, *not to be flattered.*

INDICATIVE: PRESENT.

(*I am not flattered.*)

je ne suis pas } flatté or
tu n'es pas } flattée
il n'est pas flatté
elle n'est pas flattée
nous ne sommes pas } flattés or
vous n'êtes pas } flattées
ils ne sont pas flattés
elles ne sont pas flattées

INDICATIVE: PAST INDEFINITE.

(*I have not been flattered.*)

je n'ai pas été } flatté or
tu n'as pas été } flattée
il n'a pas été flatté
elle n'a pas été flattée
nous n'avons pas été } flattés or
vous n'avez pas été } flattées
ils n'ont pas été flattés
elles n'ont pas été flattées

§ 246. EXAMPLE OF THE INTERROGATIVE CONJUGATION
OF THE PASSIVE VOICE.

Être loué, *to be praised.*

INDICATIVE: PRESENT.

(*Am I praised?*)

suis-je } loué or
es-tu } louée?
est-il loué?
est-elle louée?
sommes-nous } loués or
êtes-vous } louées?
sont-ils loués?
sont-elles louées?

INDICATIVE: PAST DEFINITE.

(*Have I been praised?*)

ai-je été } loué or
as-tu été } louée?
a-t-il été loué?
a-t-elle été louée?
avons-nous été } loués or
avez-vous été } louées?
ont-ils été loués?
ont-elles été louées?

§ 247. EXAMPLE OF THE NEGATIVE-INTERROGATIVE CON-
JUGATION OF THE PASSIVE VOICE.

Être puni, *to be punished.*

INDICATIVE: PRESENT.

(*Am not I punished?*)

ne suis-je pas } puni or
n'es-tu pas } punie?
n'est-il pas puni?
n'est-elle pas punie?
ne sommes-nous pas } punis or
n'êtes-vous pas } punies?
ne sont-ils pas punis?
ne sont-elles pas punies?

INDICATIVE: PAST INDEFINITE

(*Have I not been punished?*)

n'ai-je pas été } puni or
n'as-tu pas été } punie?
n'a-t-il pas été puni?
n'a-t-elle pas été punie?
n'avons-nous pas été } punis or
n'avez-vous pas été } punies?
n'ont-ils pas été punis?
n'ont-elles pas été punies?

§ 248. CONJUGATION OF AN INTRANSITIVE VERB
WITH THE AUXILIARY ÊTRE IN THE COMPOUND
TENSES.

' MODEL : *tomber, to fall* (compound tenses only).

INFINITIVE, PERFECT :	être	PARTICIPLE, PERFECT :	étant
tombé,* <i>to have fallen</i>		tombé,* <i>having fallen</i>	

INDICATIVE MOOD.

PAST INDEFINITE. (<i>I have fallen.</i>)	PLUPERFECT. (<i>I had fallen.</i>)
je suis } tombé or	j'étais } tombé or
tu es } tombée	tu étais } tombée
il est tombé, elle est tombée	il était tombé, elle était tombée
nous sommes } tombés or	nous étions } tombés or
vous êtes } tombées	vous étiez } tombées
ils sont tombés	ils étaient tombés
elles sont tombées	elles étaient tombées
PAST ANTERIOR. (<i>I had fallen.</i>)	FUTURE PERFECT. (<i>I shall have fallen.</i>)
je fus } tombé or	je serai } tombé or
tu fus } tombée	tu seras } tombée
il fut tombé, elle fut tombée	il sera tombé, elle sera tombée
nous fûmes } tombés or	nous serons } tombés or
vous fûtes } tombées	vous serez } tombées
ils furent tombés	ils seront tombés
elles furent tombées	elles seront tombées

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

PAST INDEFINITE. (<i>I may have fallen.</i>)	PLUPERFECT. (<i>I might have fallen.</i>)
je sois } tombé or	je fusse } tombé or
tu sois } tombée	tu fusses } tombée
il soit tombé, elle soit tombée	il fût tombé, elle fût tombée
nous soyons } tombés or	nous fussions } tombés or
vous soyez } tombées	vous fussiez } tombées
ils soient tombés	ils fussent tombés
elles soient tombées	elles fussent tombées

CONDITIONAL MOOD.

PERFECT (<i>I should have fallen.</i>)	
je serais } tombé or	nous serions } tombés or
tu serais } tombée	vous seriez } tombées
il serait tombé	ils seraient tombés
elle serait tombée	elles seraient tombées

* Tombé is here variable ; tombé, tombée, tombés or tombées.

§ 249. CONJUGATION OF A REFLEXIVE VERB.

MODEL: *se baigner, to bathe.*

INFINITIVE, PRESENT: se *	INFINITIVE, PERFECT: s' * être
<i>baigner, to bathe</i>	<i>baigné, to have bathed</i>
PARTICIPLE, PRESENT: se *	PARTICIPLE, PERFECT: s' * étant
<i>baignant, bathing</i>	<i>baigné, having bathed</i>

INDICATIVE MOOD.

PRESENT. (<i>I bathe.</i>)	PAST INDEFINITE. (<i>I have bathed.</i>)
je me baigne	je me suis } baigné or
tu te baignes	tu t'es } baignée
il se baigne	il s'est baigné
elle se baigne	elle s'est baignée
nous nous baignons	nous nous sommes } baignés or
vous vous baignez	vous vous êtes } baignées
ils se baignent	ils se sont baignés
elles se baignent	elles se sont baignées
IMPERFECT. (<i>I was bathing.</i>)	PLUPERFECT. (<i>I had bathed.</i>)
je me baignais	je m'étais } baigné or
tu te baignais	tu t'étais } baignée
il se baignait	il s'était baigné
elle se baignait	elle s'était baignée
nous nous baignions	nous nous étions } baignés or
vous vous baigniez	vous vous étiez } baignées
ils se baignaient	ils s'étaient baignés
elles se baignaient	elles s'étaient baignées
PAST DEFINITE. (<i>I bathed.</i>)	PAST ANTERIOR. (<i>I had bathed.</i>)
je me baignai	je me fus } baigné or
tu te baignas	tu te fus } baignée
il se baigna	il se fut baigné
elle se baigna	elle se fut baignée
nous nous baignâmes	nous nous fûmes } baignés or
vous vous baignâtes	vous vous fûtes } baignées
ils se baignèrent	ils se furent baignés
elles se baignèrent	elles se furent baignées

* *Se* may here be replaced by *me, te, nous, or vous*, and *baigné* by *baignée, baignés, or baignées*, according to the context.

FUTURE.

(I shall bathe.)

je me baignerai
 tu te baigneras
 il se baignera
 elle se baignera
 nous nous baignerons
 vous vous baignerez
 ils se baigneront
 elles se baigneront

FUTURE PERFECT.

(I shall have bathed.)

je me serai } baigné or
 tu te seras } baignée
 il se sera baigné
 elle se sera baignée
 nous nous serons } baignés or
 vous vous serez } baignées
 ils se seront baignés
 elles se seront baignées

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

PRESENT.

(I may bathe.)

je me baigne
 tu te baignes
 il se baigne
 elle se baigne
 nous nous baignions
 vous vous baigniez
 ils se baignent
 elles se baignent

PAST INDEFINITE.

(I may have bathed.)

je me sois } baigné or
 tu te sois } baignée
 il se soit baigné
 elle se soit baignée
 nous nous soyons } baignés or
 vous vous soyez } baignées
 ils se soient baignés
 elles se soient baignées

IMPERFECT.

(I might bathe.)

je me baignasse
 tu te baignasses
 il se baignât
 elle se baignât
 nous nous baignassions
 vous vous baignassiez
 ils se baignassent
 elles se baignassent

PLUPERFECT.

(I might have bathed.)

je me fusse } baigné or
 tu te fusses } baignée
 il se fût baigné
 elle se fût baignée
 nous nous fussions } baignés or
 vous vous fussiez } baignées
 ils se fussent baignés
 elles se fussent baignées

CONDITIONAL MOOD.

PRESENT.

(I should bathe.)

je me baignerais
 tu te baignerais
 il se baignerait
 elle se baignerait
 nous nous baignerions
 vous vous baigneriez
 ils se baigneraient
 elles se baigneraient

PERFECT.

(I should have bathed.)

je me serais } baigné or
 tu te serais } baignée
 il se serait baigné
 elle se serait baignée
 nous nous serions } baignés or
 vous vous seriez } baignées
 ils se seraient baignés
 elles se seraient baignées

IMPERATIVE MOOD.—PRESENT.

baigne-toi,	<i>bathe</i>	baignons-nous,	<i>let us bathe</i>
(qu'il se baigne),	<i>let him bathe</i>	baignez-vous,	<i>bathe</i>
		(qu'ils se baignent),	<i>let them bathe</i>

§ 250. NEGATIVE CONJUGATION OF A REFLEXIVE VERB.

MODEL: **ne pas s'emparer**, *not to take possession*.INFINITIVE, PRESENT: **ne pas s'emparer**, *not to take possession*INFINITIVE, PERFECT: **ne s'être pas *emparé**, *not to have taken possession*PARTICIPLE, PRESENT: **ne s'emparant pas**, *not taking possession*PARTICIPLE, PERFECT: **ne s'étant pas emparé**, *not having taken possession*

INDICATIVE MOOD.

PRESENT.

(I do not take possession.)
je ne m'empare pas, etc.

PAST INDEFINITE.

(I have not taken possession.)
je ne me suis pas emparé, etc.

IMPERFECT.

(I was not taking possession.)
je ne m'emparais pas, etc.

PLUPERFECT.

(I had not taken possession.)
je ne m'étais pas emparé, etc.

PAST DEFINITE.

(I did not take possession.)
je ne m'emparai pas, etc.

PAST ANTERIOR.

(I had not taken possession.)
je ne me fus pas emparé, etc.

FUTURE.

(I shall not take possession.)
je ne m'emparerai pas, etc.

FUTURE PERFECT.

(I shall not have taken possession.)
je ne me serai pas emparé, etc.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

PRESENT.

(I may not take possession.)
je ne m'empare pas, etc.

PAST INDEFINITE.

(I may not have taken possession.)
je ne me sois pas emparé, etc.

IMPERFECT.

(I might not take possession.)
je ne m'emparasse pas, etc.

PLUPERFECT.

(I might not have taken possession.)
je ne me fusse pas emparé, etc.

CONDITIONAL MOOD.

PRESENT.

(I should not take possession.)
je ne m'emparerais pas, etc.

PERFECT.

(I should not have taken possession.)
je ne me serais pas emparé, etc.* **Emparé** is variable throughout for gender and number.

IMPERATIVE MOOD.—PRESENT.

ne t'empare pas, *take not possession*
 (qu'il ne s'empare pas), *let him not take possession*
ne nous emparons pas, *let us not take possession*
ne vous emparez pas, *do not take possession*
 (qu'ils ne s'emparent pas), *let them not take possession*

§ 251. EXAMPLE OF THE INTERROGATIVE CONJUGATION OF A REFLEXIVE VERB.

Se reposer, *to rest*.

INDICATIVE : PRESENT.

(Do I rest, or Am I resting ?)

me reposé-je ?
 te reposes-tu ?
 se repose-t-il ?
 se repose-t-elle ?
 nous reposons-nous ?
 vous reposez-vous ?
 se reposent-ils ?
 se reposent-elles ?

INDICATIVE : PAST INDEFINITE.

(Have I rested ?)

me suis-je } reposé or reposée ?
 t'es-tu }
 s'est-il reposé ?
 s'est-elle reposée ?
 nous sommes-nous } reposés or
 vous êtes-vous } reposées ?
 se sont-ils reposés ?
 se sont-elles reposées ?

§ 252. EXAMPLE OF THE NEGATIVE-INTERROGATIVE CONJUGATION OF A REFLEXIVE VERB.

S'apercevoir, *to perceive*.

INDICATIVE MOOD.

PRESENT.

(Do I not perceive ?)

ne m'aperçois-je pas ? etc.

IMPERFECT.

(Was I not perceiving ?)

ne m'apercevais-je pas ? etc.

PAST DEFINITE.

(Did I not perceive ?)

ne m'aperçus-je pas ? etc.

FUTURE.

(Shall I not perceive ?)

ne m'apercevrai-je pas ? etc.

PAST INDEFINITE.

(Have I not perceived ?)

ne me suis-je pas aperçu ? * etc.

PLUPERFECT.

(Had I not perceived ?)

ne m'étais-je pas aperçu ? etc.

PAST ANTERIOR.

(Had I not perceived ?)

ne me fus-je pas aperçu ? etc.

FUTURE PERFECT.

(Shall I not have perceived ?)

ne me serai-je pas aperçu ? etc.

CONDITIONAL MOOD.

PRESENT.

(Should I not perceive ?)

ne m'apercevrais-je pas ? etc.

PERFECT.

(Should I not have perceived ?)

ne me serais-je pas aperçu ? etc.

* S'apercevoir has its past participle variable in the compound tenses.

§ 253. CONJUGATION OF AN IMPERSONAL VERB.

MODEL : grêler, *to hail*.

INFINITIVE, PRESENT : grêler , <i>to hail</i>	INFINITIVE, PERFECT : avoir grêlé , <i>to have hailed</i>
PARTICIPLE, PRESENT : (grêlant), <i>hailing</i>	PARTICIPLE, PERFECT : (ayant grêlé), <i>having hailed</i>
PARTICIPLE, PAST : grêlé , <i>hailed</i>	

INDICATIVE MOOD.

PRESENT.	PAST INDEFINITE.
il grêle, <i>it hails</i>	il a grêlé, <i>it has hailed</i>
IMPERFECT.	PLUPERFECT.
il grêlait, <i>it was hailing</i>	il avait grêlé, <i>it had hailed</i>
PAST DEFINITE.	PAST ANTERIOR.
il grêla, <i>it hailed</i>	il eut grêlé, <i>it had hailed</i>
FUTURE.	FUTURE PERFECT.
il grêlera, <i>it will hail</i>	il aura grêlé, <i>it will have hailed</i>

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

PRESENT.	PAST INDEFINITE.
il grêle, <i>it may hail</i>	il ait grêlé, <i>it may have hailed</i>
IMPERFECT.	PLUPERFECT.
il grêlât, <i>it might hail</i>	il eût grêlé, <i>it might have hailed</i>

CONDITIONAL MOOD.

PRESENT.	PERFECT.
il grêlerait, <i>it would hail</i>	il aurait grêlé, <i>it would have hailed</i>

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

PRESENT : qu'il grêle, *let it hail*

§ 254. The impersonal verb *y avoir*, *to be*, *to exist*, is thus conjugated:—

INDICATIVE MOOD.

PRESENT.	PAST INDEFINITE.
<i>il y a</i> , <i>there is</i> , <i>there are</i>	<i>il y a eu</i> , <i>there has been</i> , <i>there have been</i>
IMPERFECT.	PLUPERFECT.
<i>il y avait</i> , <i>there was</i> , <i>there were</i>	<i>il y avait eu</i> , <i>there had been</i>
PAST DEFINITE.	PAST ANTERIOR.
<i>il y eut</i> , <i>there was</i> , <i>there were</i>	<i>il y eut eu</i> , <i>there had been</i>
FUTURE.	FUTURE PERFECT.
<i>il y aura</i> , <i>there will be</i>	<i>il y aura eu</i> , <i>there will have been</i>

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

PRESENT.	PAST INDEFINITE.
<i>il y ait</i> , <i>there may be</i>	<i>il y ait eu</i> , <i>there may have been</i>
IMPERFECT.	PLUPERFECT.
<i>il y eût</i> , <i>there might be</i>	<i>il y eût eu</i> , <i>there might have been</i>

CONDITIONAL MOOD.

PRESENT.	PERFECT.
<i>il y aurait</i> , <i>there would be</i>	<i>il y aurait eu</i> , <i>there would have been</i>

QUASI-IRREGULAR VERBS OF THE FIRST CONJUGATION.

§ 255. A number of verbs of the first conjugation present certain peculiarities in the formation of some tenses, but as these peculiarities result from the laws of French pronunciation and follow fixed rules, such verbs cannot be classed as irregular.

Obs. In the tables of conjugation those tenses only are given in which some peculiarity occurs.

§ 256. These quasi-irregular verbs fall into six classes :—

- I.—Verbs with *e* mute (not followed by *l* or *t*) in the last syllable of the stem.
- II.—Verbs of which the present infinitive ends in *-eler* or *-eter*.
- III.—Verbs with close *e* (*é*) in the last syllable of the stem.
- IV.—Verbs of which the present infinitive ends in *-yer*.
- V.—Verbs of which the present infinitive ends in *-ger* or *-cer*.

I.—VERBS WITH **E** MUTE (NOT FOLLOWED BY **L** OR **T**) IN THE LAST SYLLABLE OF THE STEM.

§ 257. It is a rule in French that mute *e* cannot occur in two successive syllables. The first *e* must either have the open sound indicated by a grave accent, *e.g.* *père*, or be followed by two consonants, *e.g.* *terre*, *reste*. Verbs that have an *e* mute in the last syllable of the stem therefore require a grave accent over that *e* when another *e* mute follows immediately.

Obs. Words such as *père*, *terre*, *reste* are theoretically dissyllables.

§ 258. MODEL : *men-er, to lead.*

PRINCIPAL PARTS : *men-er, men-ant, men-é, je mèn-e, je men-ai.*

INDICATIVE,	{	je mèn-e	tu mèn-es	il mèn-e
PRESENT		nous men-ons	vous men-ez	ils mèn-ent
INDICATIVE,	{	je mèn-erai	tu mèn-eras	il mèn-era
FUTURE		nous mèn-erons	vous mèn-erez	ils mèn-eront
CONDITIONAL,	{	je mèn-erais	tu mèn-erais	il mèn-erait
PRESENT		nous mèn-erions	vous mèn-eriez	ils mèn-eraient
IMPERATIVE,	{	mèn-e		
PRESENT		men-ons	men-ez	
SUBJUNCTIVE	{	je mène	tu mèn-es	il mèn-e
PRESENT		nous menions	vous meniez	ils mèn-ent

§ 259. Conjugate similarly :

*achever, to finish.**peser, to weigh.**lever, to raise.**semer, to sow.*

Also their compounds *élever* and *soulever, to raise* ; *amener* and *emmener, to bring* ; *parsemer, to strew*, etc.

II.—VERBS OF WHICH THE PRESENT INFINITIVE ENDS IN **-ELER** OR **-ETER**.

§ 260. Verbs ending in **-eler, -eter**, usually double the consonant **l** or **t** before **e** mute instead of taking the grave accent.

§ 261. MODEL : *appel-er, to call.*

PRINCIPAL PARTS : *appel-er, appel-ant, appel-é, j'appel-l-e, j'appel-ai.*

INDICATIVE,	{	j'appel-l-e	tu appel-l-es	il appel-l-e
PRESENT		nous appel-ons	vous appel-ez	ils appel-l-ent
INDICATIVE,	{	j'appel-l-erai	tu appel-l-eras	il appel-l-era
FUTURE		nous appel-l-erons	vous appel-l-erez	ils appel-l-eront
CONDITIONAL,	{	j'appel-l-erais	tu appel-l-erais	il appel-l-erait
PRESENT		nous appel-l-erions	vous appel-l-eriez	ils appel-l-eraient
SUBJUNCTIVE,	{	j'appel-l-e	tu appel-l-es	il appel-l-e
PRESENT		nous appel-l-ions	vous appel-l-iez	ils appel-l-ent
IMPERATIVE,	{	appel-l-e		
PRESENT		appel-ons	appel-ez	

§ 262. MODEL : *jet-er, to throw.*PRINCIPAL PARTS : *jet-er, jet-ant, jet-é, je jet-t-e, je jet-ai.*

INDICATIVE,	{	<i>je jet-t-e</i>	<i>tu jet-t-es</i>	<i>il jet-t-e</i>
PRESENT	{	<i>nous jet-ons</i>	<i>vous jet-ez</i>	<i>ils jet-t-ent</i>
INDICATIVE,	{	<i>je jet-t-erai</i>	<i>tu jet-t-eras</i>	<i>il jet-t-era</i>
FUTURE	{	<i>nous jet-t-erons</i>	<i>vous jet-t-erez</i>	<i>ils jet-t-eront</i>
CONDITIONAL,	{	<i>je jet-t-erais</i>	<i>tu jet-t-erais</i>	<i>il jet-t-erait</i>
PRESENT	{	<i>nous jet-t-erions</i>	<i>vous jet-t-eriez</i>	<i>ils jet-t-eraient</i>
SUBJUNCTIVE,	{	<i>je jet-t-e</i>	<i>tu jet-t-es</i>	<i>il jet-t-e</i>
PRESENT	{	<i>nous jet-ions</i>	<i>vous jet-iez</i>	<i>ils jet-t-ent</i>
IMPERATIVE,	{		<i>jet-t-e</i>	
PRESENT	{	<i>jet-ons</i>	<i>jet-ez</i>	

§ 263. Conjugate similarly :

<i>amonceler, to heap up.</i>	<i>banqueter, to banquet.</i>
<i>atteler, to harness.</i>	<i>cacheter, to seal.</i>
<i>chanceler, to stagger.</i>	<i>décacheter, to unseal.</i>
<i>épeler, to spell.</i>	<i>feuilleter, to turn over (leaves).</i>
<i>étinceler, to glitter.</i>	<i>fureter, to ferret out.</i>
<i>niveler, to level.</i>	<i>rejeter, to throw back.</i>
<i>rappeler, to recall.</i>	<i>souffleter, to slap.</i>
<i>renouveler, to renew.</i>	<i>voleter, to flutter.</i>

§ 264. The following verbs in *-eler, -eter*, instead of doubling the consonant, follow the general rule as to verbs with *e* mute in the last syllable of the stem, and take a grave accent :—

<i>celer, to conceal.</i>	<i>acheter, to buy.</i>
<i>geler, to freeze.</i>	<i>étiqueter, to ticket.</i>
<i>harceler, to harass.</i>	<i>haleter, to pant.</i>
<i>modeler, to model.</i>	<i>racheter, to redeem.</i>
<i>peler, to peel.</i>	

And a few others which are comparatively rare.

III.—VERBS WITH CLOSE E (É) IN THE LAST SYLLABLE OF THE STEM.

§ 265. Verbs with é in the last syllable of the stem have a grave accent, instead of an acute, before e mute, except in the future indicative and present conditional, where the acute accent is retained.

§ 266. MODEL : préférer, *to prefer*.

PRINCIPAL PARTS : préférer, préférer-ant, préférer-é, je préfère-e,
je préférer-ai.

INDICATIVE,	}	je préfèr-e	tu préfèr-es	il préfèr-e
PRESENT		nous préfèr-ons	vous préfèr-ez	ils préfèr-ent
INDICATIVE,	}	je préférer-ai	tu préférer-as	il préférer-a
FUTURE		nous préférer-ons	vous préférer-ez	ils préférer-ont
CONDITIONAL,	}	je préférer-ais	tu préférer-ais	il préférer-ait
PRESENT		nous préférer-ions	vous préférer-iez	ils préférer-aient
SUBJUNCTIVE,	}	je préfèr-e	tu préfèr-es	il préfèr-e
PRESENT		nous préfér-ions	vous préfér-iez	ils préfèr-ent
IMPERATIVE,	}		préfèr-e	
PRESENT		préfèr-ons	préfèr-ez	

Obs. The future indicative and present conditional in this class of verbs present no irregularity.

§ 267. Conjugate similarly :

abrèger, <i>to shorten</i> .	posséder, <i>to possess</i> .
céder, <i>to yield</i> .	protéger, <i>to protect</i> .
espérer, <i>to hope</i> .	régler, <i>to rule</i> .
inquiéter, <i>to disquiet</i> .	régner, <i>to reign</i> .
pénétrer, <i>to penetrate</i> .	répéter, <i>to repeat</i> .
sécher, <i>to dry</i> .	

§ 268. Verbs ending in *-éer* form an exception to the preceding rule, and retain the acute accent throughout.

§ 269. MODEL : *cré-er, to create.*

PRINCIPAL PARTS : *cré-er, cré-ant, cré-é* (fem. *cré-ée*), *je cré-e, je cré-ai.*

INDICATIVE, } <i>je cré-e</i>	<i>tu cré-es</i>	<i>il cré-e</i>
PRESENT } <i>nous cré-ons</i>	<i>vous cré-ez</i>	<i>ils cré-ent</i>

and so throughout all tenses.

§ 270. Conjugate similarly :

agréer, to approve.

suppléer, to supply.

IV.—VERBS OF WHICH THE PRESENT INFINITIVE ENDS IN *-YER*.

§ 271. Verbs of the first conjugation of which the stem ends in *y* change this letter to *i* before *e* mute.

§ 272. MODEL : *ploy-er, to bend.*

PRINCIPAL PARTS : *ploy-er, ploy-ant, ploy-é, je ploi-e, je ploy-ai.*

INDICATIVE, } <i>je ploi-e</i>	<i>tu ploi-es</i>	<i>il ploi-e</i>
PRESENT } <i>nous ploy-ons</i>	<i>vous ploy-ez</i>	<i>ils ploi-ent</i>
INDICATIVE, } <i>je ploi-erai</i>	<i>tu ploi-eras</i>	<i>il ploi-era</i>
FUTURE } <i>nous ploi-erons</i>	<i>vous ploi-erez</i>	<i>ils ploi-eront</i>
CONDITIONAL, } <i>je ploi-erais</i>	<i>tu ploi-erais</i>	<i>il ploi-erait</i>
PRESENT } <i>nous ploi-erions</i>	<i>vous ploi-eriez</i>	<i>ils ploi-eraient</i>
SUBJUNCTIVE, } <i>je ploi-e</i>	<i>tu ploi-es</i>	<i>il ploi-e</i>
PRESENT } <i>nous ploy-ions</i>	<i>vous ploy-iez</i>	<i>ils ploi-ent</i>
IMPERATIVE, }	<i>ploi-e</i>	
PRESENT } <i>ploy-ons</i>	<i>ploy-ez</i>	

NOTE.—Verbs in *-ayer* usually retain the *y*, but may change it to *i*. Thus, of *payer, to pay*, the present indicative is *je paye* or *paie*, and the future indicative is *je payerai* or *paierai*.

V.—VERBS OF WHICH THE PRESENT INFINITIVE ENDS IN -GER OR -CER.

§ 273. By the rules of French pronunciation the letters *g* and *c* are hard before *a*, *o*, and *u*, and soft before *e* and *i*. To preserve the soft sound in verbs ending in -ger and -cer, an *e* is inserted after the *g* and a cedilla is put under the *c* (ç), whenever these letters are followed by *a* or *o* (*u* does not occur in the endings of this conjugation).

§ 274. MODEL: mang-er, to eat.

PRINCIPAL PARTS: mang-er, mang-e-ant, mang-é, je mang-e, je mang-e-ai.

INDICATIVE,	} je mang-e	tu mang-es	il mang-e
PRESENT	} nous mang-e- ons	vous mang-ez	ils mang-ent
INDICATIVE,	} je mang-e-ais	tu mang-e-ais	il mang-e-ait
IMPERFECT	} nous mang-ions	vous mang-iez	ils mang-e-aient
INDICATIVE,	} je mang-e-ai	tu mang-e-as	il mang-e-a
PAST DEFINITE	} nous mang-e-âmes	vous mang-e-âtes	ils mang-èrent
SUBJUNCTIVE,	} je mang-e-asse	tu mang-e-asses	il mang-e-ât
IMPERFECT	} nous mang-e-ussions	vous mang-e-assiez	ils mang-e-assent
IMPERATIVE,	}	mang-e	
PRESENT		mang-ez	

§ 275. MODEL: trac-er, to trace.

PRINCIPAL PARTS: trac-er, traç-ant, trac-é, je trac-e, je traç-ai.

INDICATIVE,	} je trac-e	tu trac-es	il trac-e
PRESENT	} nous traç- ons	vous trac-ez	ils trac-ent
INDICATIVE,	} je traç-ais	tu traç-ais	il traç-ait
IMPERFECT	} nous trac-ions	vous trac-iez	ils traç-aient
INDICATIVE,	} je traç-ai	tu traç-as	il traç-a
PAST DEFINITE	} nous traç-âmes	vous traç-âtes	ils trac-èrent
SUBJUNCTIVE,	} je traç-asse	tu traç-asses	il traç-ât
IMPERFECT	} nous traç-ussions	vous traç-assiez	ils traç-assent
IMPERATIVE,	}	trac-e	
PRESENT		trac-ez	

Obs. All verbs in -ger and -cer, without exception, are thus conjugated.

IRREGULAR VERBS.

§ 276. In the following tables the irregular verbs are arranged in four conjugations, and are grouped as far as possible according to points of similarity.

§ 277. Four tenses are omitted altogether from the tables, viz. the imperfect indicative and imperfect subjunctive, the present conditional and the present imperative. These four tenses (as was stated in § 234) can always be formed as follows:—

The **imperfect indicative** is found by changing the final **-ant** of the present participle into **-ais**.

The **imperfect subjunctive** is found by adding **-se** to the second person singular of the past definite.

The **present conditional** is found by adding **-s** to the first person singular of the future indicative.

The **imperative** is identical with the corresponding persons of the present indicative, omitting **-s** in the second person singular of the first conjugation.

The above tenses are conjugated regularly in all persons and both numbers.

NOTE.—**Avoir**, **être**, and **savoir** are the only verbs which do not follow the above rules. For **vouloir** see § 307.

§ 278. The **future indicative** is usually formed according to rule from the present infinitive, but is too frequently irregular to be omitted from the tables in this chapter; when regular it is not printed in dark type.

§ 279. In addition to the four tenses mentioned in § 277, the **past definite** and **future** indicative can always be regularly conjugated throughout when the first person singular is known. The only tenses which can be irregular in conjugation are the present indicative and the present subjunctive. These are therefore always given in full in the tables, as also is the past definite in a few cases in which peculiar collocations of letters occur. Those parts of the present subjunctive and of the plural of the present indicative which are regularly formed from the present participle (§ 234) are not printed in dark type.

§ 280. On the left-hand pages of the tables the principal parts of each verb are given, viz.: (1) present infinitive, (2) present participle, (3) past participle, (4) present indicative, and (5) past definite indicative. In the first and second conjugations, principal parts formed like those of **porter** and **finir** respectively are not printed in dark type. On the right-hand pages are the future, the present subjunctive, and the more important compounds which follow the conjugation of the simple verb; with these a few verbs are given which, though not compounds, form their tenses in exactly the same manner.

FIRST CONJUGATION.

Infinitive.	Participles.	Present Indic.	Past Def.
§ 281. <i>aller</i> <i>to go</i>	<i>all-ant</i> <i>all-é</i>	<i>vais</i> <i>vas</i> <i>va</i> <i>all-ons</i> <i>all-ez</i> <i>vont</i>	<i>all-ai</i>
§ 282. <i>envoy-er</i> <i>to send</i>	<i>envoy-ant</i> <i>envoy-é</i>	<i>envoi-e</i> <i>envoi-es</i> <i>envoi-e</i> <i>envoy-ons</i> <i>envoy-ez</i> <i>envoi-ent</i>	<i>envoy-ai</i>

SECOND CONJUGATION.

§ 283. <i>bouill-ir</i> <i>to boil</i> (intrans.)	<i>bouill-ant</i> <i>bouill-i</i>	<i>bou-s</i> <i>bou-s</i> <i>bou-t</i> <i>bouill-ons</i> <i>bouill-ez</i> <i>bouill-ent</i>	<i>bouill-is</i>
§ 284. <i>dorm-ir</i> <i>to sleep</i>	<i>dorm-ant</i> <i>dorm-i</i>	<i>dor-s</i> <i>dor-s</i> <i>dor-t</i> <i>dorm-ons</i> <i>dorm-ez</i> <i>dorm-ent</i>	<i>dorm-is</i>
§ 285. <i>ment-ir</i> <i>to lie, tell a lie</i>	<i>ment-ant</i> <i>ment-i</i>	<i>men-s</i> <i>men-s</i> <i>men-t</i> <i>ment-ons</i> <i>ment-ez</i> <i>ment-ent</i>	<i>ment-is</i>

FIRST CONJUGATION.

Future.	Present Subj.	Compounds, etc.
irai	aill-e aill-es aill-e aill-ions aill-iez aill-ent	s'en aller, <i>to go away</i> (see § 349)
enverrai	envoi-e envoi-es envoi-e envoy-ions envoy-iez envoi-ent	renvoyer, <i>to send back</i>

SECOND CONJUGATION.

bouill-irai	bouill-e bouill-es bouill-e bouill-ions bouill-iez bouill-ent	ébouillir, <i>to boil away</i> rebouillir, <i>to boil again</i> to boil (trans.) is rendered by faire bouillir
dorm-irai	dorm-e dorm-es dorm-e dorm-ions dorm-iez dorm-ent	endormir, <i>to lull to sleep</i> s'endormir, <i>to fall asleep</i> se rendormir, <i>to go to sleep again</i>
ment-irai	ment-e ment-es ment-e ment-ions ment-iez ment-ent	démentir, <i>to give the lie</i>

Infinitive.	Participles.	Present Indic.	Past Def.
§ 286. part-ir <i>to depart</i>	part-ant part-i	par-s par-s par-t part-ons part-ez part-ent	part-is
§ 287. se repent-ir <i>to repent</i>	se repent-ant repent-i	me repen-s te repen-s se repen-t nous repent-ons vous repent-ez se repent-ent	me repent-is
§ 288. sent-ir <i>to feel, to</i> <i>smell</i>	sent-ant sent-i	sen-s sen-s sen-t sent-ons sent-ez sent-ent	sent-is
§ 289. serv-ir <i>to serve</i>	serv-ant serv-i	ser-s ser-s ser-t serv-ons serv-ez serv-ent	serv-is
§ 290. sort-ir <i>to go out</i>	sort-ant sort-i	sor-s sor-s sor-t sort-ons sort-ez sort-ent	sort-is
§ 291. assaill-ir <i>to assail</i>	assaill-ant assaill-i	assaill-e assaill-es assaill-e assaill-ons assaill-ez assaill-ent	assaill-is

Future.	Present Subj.	Compounds, etc.
part-irai .	part-e part-es part-e part-ions part-iez part-ent	départir, <i>to divide</i> repartir, <i>to reply, to start again</i>
me repent-irai	me repent-e te repent-es se repent-e nous repent-ions vous repent-iez se repent-ent	
sent-irai	sent-e sent-es sent-e sent-ions sent-iez sent-ent	consentir, <i>to consent</i> pressentir, <i>to forebode</i> ressentir, <i>to resent</i> se ressentir, <i>to feel</i>
serv-irai	serv-e serv-es serv-e serv-ions serv-iez serv-ent	desservir, <i>to clear the table</i>
sort-irai	sort-e sort-es sort-e sort-ions sort-iez sort-ent	ressortir, <i>to go out again</i>
assaill-irai	assaill-e assaill-es assaill-e assaill-ions assaill-iez assaill-ent	tressaillir, <i>to start, to shudder</i>

Infinitive.	Participles.	Present Indic.	Past Def.
§ 292. cueill-ir <i>to pluck</i>	cueill-ant cueill-i	cueill-e cueill-es cueill-e cueill-ons cueill-ez cueill-ent	cueill-is
§ 293. couvr-ir <i>to cover</i>	couvr-ant couvr-t	couvr-e couvr-es couvr-e couvr-ons couvr-ez couvr-ent	couvr-is
§ 294. fu-ir <i>to flee</i>	fuy-ant fu-i	fu-is fu-is fu-it fuy-ons fuy-ez fui-ent	fu-is
§ 295. vêt-ir <i>to clothe</i>	vêt-ant vêt-u	vêt-s vêt-s vêt vêt-ons vêt-ez vêt-ent	vêt-is
§ 296. ten-ir <i>to hold</i>	ten-ant ten-u	tien-s tien-s tien-t ten-ons ten-ez tien-n-ent	tin-s tin-s tin-t tîn-mes tîn-tes tin-rent

Future.	Present Subj.	Compounds, etc.
cueill-erai	cueill-e cueill-es cueill-e cueill-ions cueill-iez cueill-ent	accueillir, <i>to welcome</i> recueillir, <i>to reap</i> se recueillir, <i>to collect one's thoughts</i>
couvr-irai	couvr-e couvr-es couvr-e couvr-ions couvr-iez couvr-ent	découvrir, <i>to discover</i> recouvrir, <i>to cover up again</i> offrir, <i>to offer</i> souffrir, <i>to suffer</i> ouvrir, <i>to open</i>
fu-irai	fui-e fui-es fui-e fuy-ions fuy-iez fui-ent	s'enfuir, <i>to flee</i>
vêt-irai	vêt-e vêt-es vêt-e vêt-ions vêt-iez vêt-ent	dévêtir, <i>to divest</i> revêtir, <i>to cover</i>
tien-d-rai	tien-n-e tien-n-es tien-n-e ten-ions ten-iez tien-n-ent	s'abstenir, <i>to abstain</i> appartenir, <i>to belong</i> contenir, <i>to contain</i> détenir, <i>to detain</i> entretenir, <i>to keep up</i> maintenir, <i>to maintain</i> obtenir, <i>to obtain</i> retenir, <i>to retain</i> soutenir, <i>to assert</i>

Infinitive.	Participles.	Present Indic.	Past Def.
§ 297. ven-ir <i>to come</i>	ven-ant ven-u	vien-s vien-s vien-t ven-ons ven-ez vien-n-ent	vin-s vin-s vin-t vin-mes vin-tes vin-rent
§ 298. cour-ir <i>to run</i>	cour-ant cour-u	cour-s cour-s cour-t cour-ons cour-ez cour-ent	cour-us
§ 299. mour-ir <i>to die</i>	mour-ant mort	meur-s meur-s meur-t mour-ons mour-ez meur-ent	mour-us
§ 300. acquér-ir <i>to acquire</i>	acquér-ant acquis	acquier-s acquier-s acquier-t acquér-ons acquér-ez acquièr-ent	acqu-is

Future.	Present Subj.	Compounds, etc.
vien-d-rai	vien-n-e vien-n-es vien-n-e ven-ions ven-iez vien-n-ent	circonvenir, <i>to circumvent</i> convenir, <i>to suit, to agree</i> devenir, <i>to become</i> intervenir, <i>to intervene</i> parvenir, <i>to reach</i> revenir, <i>to return</i> se souvenir de, <i>to remember</i>
cour-rai	cour-e cour-es cour-e cour-ions cour-iez cour-ent	accourir, <i>to hasten</i> concourir, <i>to concur</i> discourir, <i>to discourse</i> parcourir, <i>to traverse</i> secourir, <i>to help</i>
mour-rai	meur-e meur-es meur-e mour-ions mour-iez meur-ent	
acquerrai	acquièr-e acquièr-es acquièr-e acquér-ions acquér-iez acquièr-ent	conquérir, <i>to conquer</i> s'enquérir, <i>to inquire</i> requérir, <i>to require</i>

THIRD CONJUGATION.

Infinitive.	Participles.	Present Indic.	Past Def.
§ 301. recev-oir <i>to receive</i>	recev-ant reç-u	reçoi-s reçoi-s reçoi-t recev-ons recev-ez reçoiv-ent	reç-us
§ 302. dev-oir <i>to owe</i>	dev-ant dû sing. fem. due pl. masc. dus pl. fem. dues	doi-s doi-s doi-t dev-ons dev-ez doiv-ent	d-us
§ 303. mouv-oir <i>to move</i>	mouv-ant mû sing. fem. mue pl. masc. mus pl. fem. mues	meu-s meu-s meu-t mouv-ons mouv-ez meuv-ent	m-us
§ 304. pleuv-oir (impersonal) <i>to rain</i>	pleuv-ant plu	pleu-t	pl-ut
§ 305. sav-oir <i>to know</i>	sach-ant su	sai-s sai-s sai-t sav-ons sav-ez sav-ent	s-us
§ 306. pouv-oir <i>to be able</i>	pouv-ant pu	peu-x or pui-s peu-x peu-t pouv-ons pouv-ez peuv-ent	p-us

THIRD CONJUGATION.

Future.	Present Subj.	Compounds, &c.
recev-rai	reçoi- ve reçoiv- es reçoiv- e recev-ions recev-iez reçoiv-ent	apercevoir, <i>to perceive</i> concevoir, <i>to conceive</i> décevoir, <i>to deceive</i> percevoir, <i>to levy</i> (taxes)
dev-rai	doiv- e doiv- es doiv- e dev-ions dev-iez doiv-ent	redevoir, <i>to owe still</i>
mouv-rai	meuv- e meuv- es meuv- e mouv-ions mouv-iez meuv-ent	
pleuv-ra	pleuv- e	
sau-rai	sach- e sach- es sach- e sach-ions sach-iez sach-ent	IMPERATIVE-- sache sachons sachez
pour-rai	puiss- e puiss- es puiss- e puiss-ions puiss-iez puiss-ent	

Infinitive.	Participles.	Present Indic.	Past Def.
§ 307. voul-oir <i>to wish</i>	voul-ant voul-u	veu-x veu-x veu-t voul-ons voul-ez veul-ent	voul-us
§ 308. val-oir <i>to be worth</i>	val-ant val-u	vau-x vau-x vau-t val-ons val-ez val-ent	val-us
§ 309. fall-oir (impersonal) <i>to be necessary</i>	fall-u	fau-t	fall-ut
§ 310. v-oir <i>to see</i>	voy-ant vu	voi-s voi-s voi-t voy-ons voy-ez voi-ent	v-is
§ 311. asse-oir <i>to seat, to set</i>	assey-ant assis	assied-s assied-s assied assey-ons assey-ez assey-ent	ass-is
§ 312. av-oir <i>to have</i>	ay-ant eu	ai as a av-ons av-ez ont	e-us

Future.	Present Subj.	Compounds, etc.
vou d-rai .	veu-il-l-e veu-il-l-es veu-il-l-e voul-ions voul-iez veu-il-l-ent	For the imperative, the forms <i>veuille, veuillez</i> are in use.
vau-d-rai	vail-l-e vail-l-es vail-l-e val-ions val-iez vail-l-ent	équivaloir, <i>to be equivalent</i> prévaloir , <i>to prevail</i> , has pres. subj. prévale
fau-d ra	faill-e	
ver-rai	voi-e voi-es voi-e voy-ions voy-iez voi-ent	entrevoir, <i>to catch a glimpse</i> revoir, <i>to see again</i> prévoir , <i>to foresee</i> , and pour- voir , <i>to provide</i> , have fut. -voirai, and pouvoir has past def. pouvus
assié-rai or assey-erai	assey-e assey-es assey-e assey-ions assey-iez assey-ent	s'asseoir, <i>to sit down</i> rasseoir, <i>to put back</i> se rasseoir, <i>to sit down again</i>
au-rai	ai-e ai-es ai-t ay-ons ay-ez ai-ent	

FOURTH CONJUGATION.

Infinitive.	Participles.	Present Indic.	Past Def.
§ 313. <i>connai-t-re</i> <i>to know</i>	<i>connai-ss-ant</i> <i>conn-u</i>	<i>connai-s</i> <i>connai-s</i> <i>connai-t</i> <i>connai-ss-ons</i> <i>connai-ss-ez</i> <i>connai-ss-ent</i>	<i>conn-us</i>
§ 314. <i>parai-t-re</i> <i>to appear</i>	<i>parai-ss-ant</i> <i>par-u</i>	<i>parai-s</i> <i>parai-s</i> <i>parai-t</i> <i>parai-ss-ons</i> <i>parai-ss-ez</i> <i>parai-ss-ent</i>	<i>par-us</i>
§ 315. <i>croi-t-re</i> <i>to grow</i>	<i>croi-ss-ant</i> <i>crû</i> sing. fem. <i>crue</i> pl. masc. <i>crus</i> pl. fem. <i>crues</i>	<i>croi-s</i> <i>croi-s</i> <i>croi-t</i> <i>croi-ss-ons</i> <i>croi-ss-ez</i> <i>croi-ss-ent</i>	<i>cr-ûs</i> <i>cr-ûs</i> <i>cr-ût</i> <i>cr-ûmes</i> <i>cr-ûtes</i> <i>cr-ûrent</i>
§ 316. <i>nai-t-re</i> <i>to be born</i>	<i>nai-ss-ant</i> <i>né</i>	<i>nai-s</i> <i>nai-s</i> <i>nai-t</i> <i>nai-ss-ons</i> <i>nai-ss-ez</i> <i>nai-ss-ent</i>	<i>naqu-is</i>
§ 317. <i>plai-re</i> <i>to please</i>	<i>plai-s-ant</i> <i>plu</i>	<i>plai-s</i> <i>plai-s</i> <i>plai-t</i> <i>plai-s-ons</i> <i>plai-s-ez</i> <i>plai-s-ent</i>	<i>pl-us</i>
§ 318. <i>li-re</i> <i>to read</i>	<i>li-s-ant</i> <i>lu</i>	<i>li-s</i> <i>li-s</i> <i>li-t</i> <i>li-s-ons</i> <i>li-s-ez</i> <i>li-s-ent</i>	<i>l-us</i>

FOURTH CONJUGATION.

Future.	Present Subj.	Compounds, etc.
connai-t-rai	connai-ss-e connai-ss-es connai-ss-e connai-ss-ions connai-ss-iez connai-ss-ent	méconnaître, <i>not to recognise</i> reconnaître, <i>to recognise</i>
parai-t-rai	parai-ss-e parai-ss-es parai-ss-e parai-ss-ions parai-ss-iez parai-ss-ent	apparaître, <i>to appear</i> comparaître, <i>to appear in court</i> disparaître, <i>to disappear</i> reparaître, <i>to reappear</i>
croi-t-rai	croi-ss-e croi-ss-es croi-ss-e croi-ss-ions croi-ss-iez croi-ss-ent	
nai-t-rai	nai-ss-e nai-ss-es nai-ss-e nai-ss-ions nai-ss-iez nai-ss-ent	
plai-rai	plai-s-e plai-s-es plai-s-e plai-s-ions plai-s-iez plai-s-ent	complaire, <i>to humour</i> déplaire, <i>to displease</i>
li-rai	li-s-e li-s-es li-s-e li-s-ions li-s-iez li-s-ent	élire, <i>to elect</i> réélire, <i>to re-elect</i> relire, <i>to read again</i>

Infinitive.	Participles.	Present Indic.	Past Def.
§ 319. tai-re <i>to keep secret</i>	tai-s-ant tu	tai-s tai-s tai-t tai-s-ons tai-s-ez tai-s-ent	t-us
§ 320. boi-re <i>to drink</i>	bu-v-ant bu	boi-s boi-s boi-t bu-v-ons bu-v-ez boi-v-ent	b-us
§ 321. croi-re <i>to believe</i>	croy-ant croi	croi-s croi-s croi-t croy-ons croy-ez croi-ent	cr-us
§ 322. conclu-re <i>to conclude</i>	conclu-ant conclu	conclu-s conclu-s conclu-t conclu-ons conclu-ez conclu-ent	concl-us
§ 323. mou-d-re <i>to grind</i>	mou-l-ant mou-l-u	mou-d-s mou-d-s mou-d mou-l-ons mou-l-ez mou-l-ent	moul-us
§ 324. absou-d-re <i>to absolve</i>	absol-v-ant absou-s (f. absou-te)	absou-s absou-s absou-t absol-v-ons absol-v-ez absol-v-ent	—

Future.	Present Subj.	Compounds, etc.
tai-rai .	tai-s-e tai-s-es tai-s-e tai-s-ions tai-s-iez tai-s-ent	se taire, <i>to be silent</i>
boi-rai	boi-v-e boi-v-es boi-v-e bu-v-ions bu-v-iez boi-v-ent	
croi-rai	croi-e croi-es croi-e croy-ions croy-iez croi-ent	mécroire, <i>to disbelieve</i>
conclu-rai	conclu-e conclu-es conclu-e conclu-ions conclu-iez conclu-ent	exclure, <i>to exclude</i>
mou-d-rai	mou-l-e mou-l-es mou-l-e mou-l-ions mou-l-iez mou-l-ent	émoudre, <i>to sharpen</i> rémoudre, <i>to re-sharpen</i> remoudre, <i>to grind again</i>
absou-d-rai	absol-v-e absol-v-es absol-v-e absol-v-ions absol-v-iez absol-v-ent	dissoudre, <i>to dissolve</i>

Infinitive.	Participles.	Present Indic.	Past Def.
§ 325. résoudre to resolve	résolv-ant résou-s (<i>dis- solved</i>) résol-u (<i>deter- mined</i>)	résou-s résou-s résou-t résol-v-ons résol-v-ez résol-v-ent	résol-us
§ 326. vivre to live	viv-ant véc-u	vi-s vi-s vi-t viv-ons viv-ez viv-ent	véc-us
§ 327. cou-d-re to sew	cou-s-ant cou-s-u	cou-d-s cou-d-s coud cou-s-ons cou-s-ez cou-s-ent	cou-s-is
§ 328. vainc-re to conquer	vainqu-ant vainc-u	vainc-s vainc-s vainc vainqu-ons vainqu-ez vainqu-ent	vainqu-is
§ 329. crain-d-re to fear	craign-ant crain-t	crain-s crain-s crain-t craign-ons craign-ez craign-ent	craign-is
§ 330. pein-d-re to paint	peign-ant pein-t	pein-s pein-s pein-t peign-ons peign-ez peign-ent	peign-is

Future.	Present Subj.	Compounds, etc.
résou-d-rai	résol-v-e résol-v-es résol-v-e résol-v-ions résol-v-iez résol-v-ent	
viv-rai	viv-e viv-es viv-e viv-ions viv-iez viv-ent	revivre, <i>to revive</i> survivre, <i>to survive</i>
cou-d-rai	cou-s-e cou-s-es cou-s-e cou-s-ions cou-s-iez cou-s-ent	découdre, <i>to unsew</i> recoudre, <i>to sew again</i>
vainc-rai	vainqu-e vainqu-es vainqu-e vainqu-ions vainqu-iez vainqu-ent	convaincre, <i>to convince</i>
cRAIN-d-rai	craign-e craign-es craign-e craign-ions craign-iez craign-ent	plaindre, <i>to pity</i> se plaindre, <i>to complain</i> contraindre, <i>to compel</i>
pein-d-rai	peign-e peign-es peign-e peign-ions peign-iez peign-ent	atteindre, <i>to reach</i> astreindre, <i>to compel</i> ceindre, <i>to gird</i> enfreindre, <i>to infringe</i> éteindre, <i>to extinguish</i> feindre, <i>to feign</i> restreindre, <i>to restrict</i> teindre, <i>to dye</i>

Infinitive.	Participles.	Present Indic.	Past Def.
§ 331. join-d-re <i>to join</i>	joign-ant join-t	join-s join-s join-t joign-ons joign-ez joign-ent	joign-is
§ 332. condui-re <i>to conduct</i>	condui-s-ant condui-t	condui-s condui-s condui-t condui-s-ons condui-s-ez condui-s-ent	condui-s-is
§ 333. instrui-re <i>to instruct</i>	instrui-s-ant instrui-t	instrui-s instrui-s instrui-t instrui-s-ons instrui-s-ez instrui-s-ent	instrui-s-is
§ 334. -cui-re <i>to cook</i>	cui-s-ant cui-t	cui-s cui-s cui-t cui-s-ons cui-s-ez cui-s-ent	cui-s-is
§ 335. nui-re <i>to harm</i>	nui-s-ant nui	nui-s nui-s nui-t nui-s-ons nui-s-ez nui-s-ent	nui-s-is
§ 336. écri-re <i>to write</i>	écri-v-ant écri-t	écri-s écri-s écri-t écri-v-ons écri-v-ez écri-v-ent	écri-v-is

Future.	Present Subj.	Compounds, etc.
join-d-rai	joign-e joign-es joign-e joign-ions joign-iez joign-ent	conjoindre, <i>to unite</i> déjoindre, <i>to separate</i> enjoindre, <i>to enjoin</i> rejoindre, <i>to rejoin</i> oindre, <i>to anoint</i>
condui-rai	condui-s-e condui-s-es condui-s-e condui-s-ions condui-s-iez condui-s-ent	déduire, <i>to deduct</i> éconduire, <i>to show out</i> introduire, <i>to introduce</i> produire, <i>to produce</i> réduire, <i>to reduce</i> séduire, <i>to seduce</i> traduire, <i>to translate</i>
instrui-rai	instrui-s-e instrui-s-es instrui-s-e instrui-s-ions instrui-s-iez instrui-s-ent	construire, <i>to construct</i> détruire, <i>to destroy</i>
cui-rai	cui-s-e cui-s-es cui-s-e cui-s-ions cui-s-iez cui-s-ent	recuire, <i>to cook again</i>
nui-rai	nui-s-e nui-s-es nui-s-e nui-s-ions nui-s-iez nui-s-ent	luire, <i>to shine</i> reluire, <i>to gleam</i> These have no past definite.
écri-rai	écri-v-e écri-v-es écri-v-e écri-v-ions écri-v-iez écri-v-ent	décrire, <i>to describe</i> inscrire, <i>to inscribe</i> prescrire, <i>to prescribe</i> proscrire, <i>to proscribe</i> souscrire, <i>to subscribe</i> transcrire, <i>to transcribe</i>

Infinitive.	Participles.	Present Indic.	Past Def.
§ 337. <i>trai-re</i> <i>to milk</i>	<i>tray-ant</i> <i>trai-t</i>	<i>trai-s</i> <i>trai-s</i> <i>trai-t</i> <i>tray-ons</i> <i>tray-ez</i> <i>trai-ent</i>	— .
§ 338. <i>suiv-re</i> <i>to follow</i>	<i>suiv-ant</i> <i>suiv-i</i>	<i>sui-s</i> <i>sui-s</i> <i>sui-t</i> <i>suiv-ons</i> <i>suiv-ez</i> <i>suiv-ent</i>	<i>suiv-is</i>
§ 339. <i>ri-re</i> <i>to laugh</i>	<i>ri-ant</i> <i>ri</i>	<i>ri-s</i> <i>ri-s</i> <i>ri-t</i> <i>ri-ons</i> <i>ri-ez</i> <i>ri-ent</i>	<i>r-is</i>
§ 340. <i>suffi-re</i> <i>to suffice</i>	<i>suffi-s-ant</i> <i>suffi</i>	<i>suffi-s</i> <i>suffi-s</i> <i>suffi-t</i> <i>suffi-s-ons</i> <i>suffi-s-ez</i> <i>suffi-s-ent</i>	<i>suff-is</i>
§ 341. <i>confi-re</i> <i>to pickle</i>	<i>confi-s-ant</i> <i>confi-t</i>	<i>confi-s</i> <i>confi-s</i> <i>confi-t</i> <i>confi-s-ons</i> <i>confi-s-ez</i> <i>confi-s-ent</i>	<i>conf-is</i>
§ 342. <i>di-re</i> <i>to say</i>	<i>di-s-ant</i> <i>di-t</i>	<i>di-s</i> <i>di-s</i> <i>di-t</i> <i>di-s-ons</i> <i>di-t-es</i> <i>di-s-ent</i>	<i>di-s</i> <i>di-s</i> <i>di-t</i> <i>di-mes</i> <i>di-t-es</i> <i>di-rent</i>

Future.	Present Subj.	Compounds, etc.
traï-raï	traï-e traï-es traï-e tray-ions tray-iez traï-ent	abstraire, <i>to abstract</i> disträire, <i>to distract</i> extraire, <i>to extract</i> soustraire, <i>to subtract</i>
suiv-raï	suiv-e suiv-es suiv-e suiv-ions suiv-iez suiv-ent	s'ensuivre (impersonal), <i>to result</i> poursuivre, <i>to pursue</i>
ri-raï	ri-e ri-es ri-e ri-ions ri-iez ri-ent	sourire, <i>to smile</i>
suffi-raï	suffi-s-e suffi-s-es suffi-s-e suffi-s-ions suffi-s-iez suffi-s-ent	
confi-raï	confi-s-e confi-s-es confi-s-e confi-s-ions confi-s-iez confi-s-ent	déconfire, <i>to discomfit</i>
di-raï	di-s-e di-s-es di-s-e di-s-ions di-s-iez di-s-ent	redire, <i>to say again</i> Other compounds have pres. ind. 2nd pers. pl. in -disez; e.g. from médire, <i>to slander</i> , vous médisez

Infinitive.	Participles.	Present Indic.	Past Def.
§ 343. maudi-re <i>to curse</i>	maudi-ss-ant maudi-t	maudi-s maudi-s maudi-t maudi-ss-ons maudi-ss-ez maudi-ss-ent	maud-is .
§ 344. fai-re <i>to make, to do</i>	fai-s-ant fai-t	fai-s fai-s fai-t fai-s-ons fai-t-es font	f-is
§ 345. prend-re <i>to take</i>	pren-ant pris	prend-s prend-s prend pren-ons pren-ez pren-n-ent	pr-is
§ 346. mett-re <i>to put</i>	mett-ant mis	met-s met-s met mett-ons mett-ez mett-ent	m-is
§ 347. batt-re <i>to beat</i>	batt-ant batt-u	bat-s bat-s bat batt-ons batt-ez batt-ent	batt-is
§ 348. èt-re <i>to be</i>	èt-ant èt-é	suis es est som mes èt-es sont	f-us

Future.	Present Subj.	Compounds, etc.
maudi-rai	maudi-ss-e maudi-ss-es maudi-ss-e maudi-ss-ions maudi-ss-iez maudi-ss-ent	
fe-rai	fa-ss-e fa-ss-es fa-ss-e fa-ss-ions fa-ss-iez fa-ss-ent	contrefaire, <i>to feign</i> défaire, <i>to undo</i> se défaire de, <i>to get rid of</i> refaire, <i>to do again</i> satisfaire, <i>to satisfy</i> surfaire, <i>to overcharge</i>
prend-rai	pren-n-e pren-n-es pren-n-e pren-ions pren-iez pren-n-ent	apprendre, <i>to learn</i> comprendre, <i>to understand</i> entreprendre, <i>to undertake</i> se méprendre, <i>to be mistaken</i> reprendre, <i>to resume</i> surprendre, <i>to surprise</i>
mett-rai	mett-e mett-es mett-e mett-ions mett-iez mett-ent	admettre, <i>to admit</i> commettre, <i>to commit</i> compromettre, <i>to compromise</i> omettre, <i>to omit</i> permettre, <i>to permit</i> soumettre, <i>to subdue</i> transmettre, <i>to transmit</i>
batt-rai	batt-e batt-es batt-e batt-ions batt-iez batt-ent	se battre, <i>to fight</i> abattre, <i>to beat down</i> combattre, <i>to fight</i> débattre, <i>to dispute</i>
se-rai	soi-s soi-s soi-t soy-ons soy-ez soi-ent	

§ 349. CONJUGATION OF THE REFLEXIVE
S'EN ALLER.

INFINITIVE, PRESENT: s' * en aller, <i>to go away</i>	INFINITIVE, PERFECT: s' * en être allé, <i>to have gone away.</i>
PARTICIPLE, PRESENT: s' * en allant, <i>going away</i>	PARTICIPLE, PERFECT: s' * en étant allé, <i>having gone away.</i>

INDICATIVE MOOD.

PRESENT. (<i>I go away.</i>) je m'en vais, etc.	PAST INDEFINITE. (<i>I have gone away.</i>) je m'en suis allé or allée, etc.
IMPERFECT. (<i>I was going away.</i>) je m'en allais, etc.	PLUPERFECT. (<i>I had gone away.</i>) je m'en étais allé or allée, etc.
PAST DEFINITE. (<i>I went away.</i>) je m'en allai, etc.	PAST ANTERIOR. (<i>I had gone away.</i>) je m'en fus allé or allée, etc.
FUTURE. (<i>I shall go away.</i>) je m'en irai, etc.	FUTURE PERFECT. (<i>I shall have gone away.</i>) je m'en serai allé or allée, etc.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

PRESENT. (<i>I may go away.</i>) je m'en aille, etc.	PAST INDEFINITE. (<i>I may have gone away.</i>) je m'en sois allé or allée, etc.
IMPERFECT. (<i>I might go away.</i>) je m'en allasse, etc.	PLUPERFECT. (<i>I might have gone away.</i>) je m'en fusse allé or allée, etc.

CONDITIONAL MOOD.

PRESENT. (<i>I should go away.</i>) je m'en irais, etc.	PERFECT. (<i>I should have gone away.</i>) je m'en serais allé or allée, etc.
---	---

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

PRESENT. va-t'en , <i>go away</i> allons-nous-en , <i>let us go away</i> allez-vous-en , <i>go away</i>

* Se may here be replaced by **me**, **te**, **nous**, or **vous**, and allé by allée, allés, or allées, according to the context.

§ 350. NEGATIVE CONJUGATION OF THE PAST INDEFINITE
INDICATIVE OF *s'en aller*.

(I have not gone away.)

je ne m'en suis pas allé or allée
tu ne t'en es pas allé or allée
il ne s'en est pas allé
elle ne s'en est pas allée

nous ne nous en sommes pas allés or allées
vous ne vous en êtes pas allés or allées
ils ne s'en sont pas allés
elles ne s'en sont pas allées

§ 351. INTERROGATIVE CONJUGATION OF THE PAST INDEFINITE
INDICATIVE OF *s'en aller*.

(Have I not gone away?)

m'en suis-je allé or allée ?
t'en es-tu allé or allée ?
s'en est-il allé ?
s'en est-elle allée ?

nous en sommes-nous allés or allées ?
vous en êtes-vous allés or allées ?
s'en sont-ils allés ?
s'en sont-elles allées ?

§ 352. NEGATIVE-INTERROGATIVE CONJUGATION OF THE PAST
INDEFINITE INDICATIVE OF *s'en aller*.

(Have I not gone away?)

ne m'en suis-je pas allé or allée ?
ne t'en es-tu pas allé or allée ?
ne s'en est-il pas allé ?
ne s'en est-elle pas allée ?

ne nous en sommes-nous pas allés or allées ?
ne vous en êtes-vous pas allés or allées ?
ne s'en sont-ils pas allés ?
ne s'en sont-elles pas allées ?

APPENDIX.

(A.)—RULES FOR GENDER.

§ 353. Masculine are—

1. Names of males.

le fils, *the son*.

un ours, *a he-bear*.

le marin, *the sailor*.

un tigre, *a tiger*.

2. Names of days, months, and seasons.

le mardi gras, *Shrove Tuesday*.

le mai de 1897, *the May of 1897*.

le printemps de l'année prochaine, *the spring of next year*.

3. Names of trees and metals.

le frêne, *the ash*.

le cuivre, *copper*.

4. Names of countries and provinces not ending in -e mute, and singular names of mountains.

le Portugal, *Portugal*.

le Poitou, *Poitou*.

le Sinai, *Sinaï*.

5. Names of fruits, flowers, and vegetables, not ending in -e mute.

un ananas, *a pine-apple*.

le lis, *the lily*.

le navet, *the turnip*.

6. Other parts of speech used as substantives.

le jaune, *yellow*.

le pourquoi, *the why and wherefore*.

le manger, *eating*.

un on-dit, *a hearsay*.

§ 354. Feminine are—

1. Names of females.

la fille, *the daughter*.

une ourse, *a she-bear*.

la blanchisseuse, *the laundress*.

la tigresse, *the tigress*.

2. Most abstract substantives.

la chaleur, *heat*.

la sagesse, *wisdom*.

la prudence, *prudence*.

la vérité, *truth*.

(B.)—SPECIMEN OF PARSING.

§ 358. *Il y a des gens qui voudraient qu'un auteur ne parlât jamais des choses dont les autres ont parlé; autrement on l'accuse de ne rien dire de nouveau.*

Il y a : pres. indic. of impersonal verb *y avoir*.

des : partitive article, plural, agreeing with *gens*.

gens : common substantive, fem. (or masc.) pl., acc. governed by *il y a*, antecedent to *qui*.

qui : relative pronoun, agreeing with *gens*, nom. to *voudraient*.

voudraient : third pl. pres. cond. of irreg. verb *vouloir*, third conj.

qu'un { *que* : subordinating conjunction.

un : indefinite article, masc. sing., agreeing with *auteur*.

auteur : common substantive masc. sing., nom. to *parlât*.

ne : negative adverb, modifying *parlât*.

parlât : third sing. imperf. subj. of reg. verb *parler*, first conjugation, depending on *voudraient*.

jamais : adverb of time, completing the negative *ne*.

des { *de* : preposition, governing *choses*.

les : definite article, fem. pl., agreeing with *choses*.

choses : common substantive, fem. pl., governed by *de*, antecedent to *dont*.

dont : relative pronoun, genitive, referring to *choses*.

les : definite article, masc. pl., agreeing with *autres*.

autres : indefinite pronoun, masc. pl., nom. to *ont parlé*.

ont parlé : third pl. past indef. indic. of reg. verb *parler*, first conj.

autrement : adverb of manner, modifying *accuse*.

on : indefinite pronoun, nom. to *accuse*.

l'accuse { *le* : conjunctive personal pronoun, third person sing. masc., acc. governed by *accuse*.

accuse : third sing. pres. indic. of reg. verb *accuser*, first conj.

de : preposition governing the infin. *dire*.

ne : negative adverb, modifying *dire*.

rien : indefinite pronoun, direct object of *dire*, completing the negative *ne*.

dire : pres. infin. of irreg. verb *dire*, fourth conj.

de : preposition governing *nouveau*.

nouveau : neuter adjective of quality used substantively, governed by *de*

PASSAGES FOR TRANSLATION.

1.

Alfred the Great was a wise man and a good king. He was never idle. He built several schools, and did all he could to encourage the young people in England to love learning. One of the best things he did was to construct a large number of ships. He fought with his enemies on the water instead of allowing them to land on the coasts. He was ill for a long time before he died, but he was very patient and bore his pain without complaining. He died when he had been king twenty-nine years. 5

2.

Caractacus was permitted to address the Emperor. He reminded Claudius that the obstinacy of his resistance enhanced the glory of his defeat; if he were now ignominiously put to death, his name and exploits would be soon forgotten; but, if permitted to live, they would be eternally remembered as a memorial of the Emperor's clemency. The Emperor, moved by this appeal, granted the lives of all his illustrious captives. 5

3.

Hampden was struck by two bullets, which lodged in his body. With his head and hands leaning on his horse's neck, he turned towards Thame, where he arrived almost fainting. The surgeon dressed his wounds, but there was no hope. He endured his pain with admirable resignation. He wrote from his bed several letters to London concerning public affairs. When his public duties were performed, he calmly prepared himself to die. 5

4.

As soon as King Henry the First was dead, his nephew Stephen who was very handsome and brave, was made king. A great many Normān barons and English lords went with him to Westminster Abbey, and then the Archbishop of Canterbury put the crown upon 5 his head, and they all promised to obey him as their sovereign. But some noblemen and bishops, who had sworn to recognise the Empress Maud as Queen of England, and to keep the kingdom for her young son Henry, sent messengers to bring them from Anjou, which was their own country.

5.

It was getting late, but, though the king was dead, the fight still went on. Of the king's own chosen men it would seem that not one either fled or was taken prisoner. All died at their posts save a few wounded men, who were cast aside as dead, but found strength to get 5 away on the morrow. But the others fled, some of them on the horses of the slain men. Yet, even in this last moment, they knew how to revenge themselves on their conquerors.

6.

One day my father told me that he was going into the little town where my grandmother lived and that I was to go with him to see her. When we arrived at my grandmother's, my father went upstairs and I followed him. My grandmother was sitting in the drawing- 5 room; she was expecting us. She came to meet us with a smile, and told my father that she was glad that he had brought me, and she hoped I would spend a happy day. She then told me I might go into the garden to play for half an hour.

7.

London,

August 11th, 1899.

DEAR JACK,

You have no doubt heard that I left school at Easter and that I 5 am looking out for a post. Do you know any one who wants a junior clerk? For two months I have been studying book-keeping and French, but am not making much progress. I think the best plan would be to spend a month or two in Paris: can you give me the

address of a decent boarding-house? I met your cousin yesterday and he told me you were thinking of going to Germany in October. 10 I hope you will enjoy yourself there. When you have time write me a line.

Yours ever,
CHARLIE.

8.

Rochelle was immediately thrown into a state of defence. Its existing fortifications were repaired and strengthened, and new batteries erected. The Duke of Rohan was not in the town, but the old Duchess of Rohan—a lion-hearted woman—was there, and by her presence and enthusiasm stimulated the energy of the citizens. An 5 embassy was also sent to the English Court, representing the condition of the Rochellois, and reminding the king of his promise. Charles declared that he would hazard his three kingdoms, if need be, for their deliverance.

9.

When Bonaparte was besieging Toulon, which was then in possession of the English, he was one day directing the construction of a battery, and, as the enemy perceived it, they began firing upon it. Bonaparte, who wanted to send off a despatch, asked for a sergeant who could write. A sergeant came out of the ranks and 5 wrote the letter. Scarcely was it finished when a cannon ball fell between the general and him, and covered them with dust; the latter, looking towards the English lines, said: "Gentlemen, I thank you; I did not think you were so polite. I wanted some sand for my letter." 10

10

At length, one day, when the Hermit had, with a crowd of pilgrims, ascended Mount Calvary and prostrated himself at the Holy Sepulchre, a celestial voice seemed to sound in his ear. "Peter," it said, "arise! Hasten to proclaim the tribulation of my people. For it is time that my servants should be aided, and that the holy places should be 5 freed!" The enthusiast, after listening to these words, entertained no doubt that he was designed by Heaven to deliver Jerusalem. Rising from the ground, he repaired to the house of the Patriarch.

11.

Aix-la-Chapelle, German *Aachen*, a very ancient town with 110,500 inhabitants, lies in a fertile basin surrounded by gently sloping hills. It was a favourite residence of Charlemagne, who died here in 814. That monarch elevated the town to the rank of the second city in his empire, and made it the capital of his dominions to the north of the Alps. From his death down to the accession of Ferdinand I. Aix witnessed the coronation of all the German emperors, and was called *par excellence* the free city of the Holy Roman Empire and seat of royalty.

12.

I once saw on the top of one of those cliffs a sight which greatly amused me. A stout old lady, followed by half-a-dozen little dogs, all equally fat and out of breath, was giving chase to a young girl, who had baffled her vigilance, and concealed herself half-way down the slope in order to read without being disturbed. The old lady at last discovered the fugitive, but the path which led to her hiding place was so steep that she dared not go down. In vain she entreated and threatened, nothing could induce the obstinate girl to obey. It was three o'clock, and I believe this scene would have lasted till night, if a heavy shower had not come to the poor grandmother's assistance.

13.

Scarcely had Sir James d'Avennes breathed his last, when Cœur de Lion advanced with the main army of crusaders, and the shock was terrific. Breaking into the Moslem ranks, with his ponderous battle-axe in his hand, Cœur de Lion swept the Saracens before him, dispersing them right and left, and chasing them across the torrent. But meanwhile the crusaders, assailed on all hands by the crowd of foes who poured down from the heights, were giving way; and the King was under the necessity of retracing his steps to come to their aid.

14.

King James fixed his head quarters at Salisbury, and there gathered around him the bulk of his army, 40,000 strong. But, even before James joined his troops in person, desertions became frequent. Viscount Cornbury, Clarendon's eldest son, was amongst the earliest to go over, though he failed in his attempt to take three regiments with

him. Churchill, James's most trusted officer, soon followed, pleading that his religion outweighed his loyalty and his interests; and on the very next day James gave orders for a retreat.

15.

Few towns can vie with Heidelberg in the beauty of its environs and its historical interest. Count Palatine Otho of Wittelsbach transferred the seat of his government from Stahleck, near Bacharach, to Heidelberg, which thus became the capital of the Palatinate, and continued so for nearly five centuries, until the Elector Charles Philip in 1721, owing to ecclesiastical differences with the Protestant citizens, transferred his seat to Mannheim. Since 1802 Heidelberg has belonged to the grand-duchy of Baden. The town, which now contains 35,140 inhabitants, forms the key of the mountainous valley of the Neckar, which opens here into the plain of the Rhine.

16.

On the 16th of July Dupont was attacked at Baylen by Castanos, who knew from an intercepted despatch the extent of his enemy's distress; the French were beaten, and driven as far as Menjibar. They returned on the 18th, and attempted to recover Baylen; but, after a long and desperate battle, in which 3000 of the French were killed, Dupont, perceiving that the Spaniards were gathering all around in numbers not to be resisted, proposed to capitulate. In effect, he and 20,000 soldiers laid down their arms at Baylen on condition that they should be transported in safety into France. The Spaniards broke this convention, and detained them as prisoners.

17.

Rosamond warmly seconded her husband's suggestion, and, with her characteristic impatience of delay, proposed that they should find out the medical man immediately. Uncle Joseph announced—a little unwillingly, as it seemed—in answer to her enquiries, that he knew the place of the doctor's residence, and that he was generally to be found at home before one o'clock in the afternoon. It was then just half-past twelve; and Rosamond, with her husband's approval, rang the bell at once to send for a cab.

18.

So confident was Bonaparte of success, that messengers were actually despatched from the field to announce it. On the day of the battle, it was telegraphed to Boulogne that the Emperor had gained a most complete victory over the united British and Prussian armies, commanded by Wellington and Blucher. A bulletin extraordinary was published at Lille, stating that the emperor himself, setting the example in the war, had fired the first carbine, and had a horse killed under him; that his astonishing victories of the 15th, 16th, and 17th of June were exceeded by that of the 18th, in which he had taken 30,000 prisoners. One account announced his entrance into Brussels; and another said that the cannons were roaring from the ramparts of the French fortresses to celebrate that event.

19.

Early in the middle ages the French kings possessed a fortress on this site commanding the Seine. The chapel, which is still in existence, was built by St. Louis. During the wars with England the castle was destroyed. It was restored by Charles V., but the present building dates from the time of Francis I., who here celebrated his nuptials with Claudia, daughter of Louis XII. Henri II. built the adjacent *Château Neuf*, which continued to be a favourite royal residence till the time of Louis XIV., who was born here in 1638. After Louis XIV. had established his court at Versailles, the château was occupied for twelve years by the exiled king James II., who died here in 1701 and was interred in the church.

20.

The life of a British sailor may be said to be a life of enterprise. This character, however, belongs more particularly to some of our admirals, by whose noble daring the most gallant exploits have been achieved, and the naval glory of Britain exalted to the highest pitch. Among those who, at an early period of our naval history, contributed much to this end, none was more distinguished than Admiral Blake, who, although embracing the profession of a sailor late in life, made the English feared and respected in every quarter of the globe.

21.

Then followed a fearful scene. The English would not quit Toulon without destroying the French ships and arsenals that had fallen into

their possession; nor could they refuse to take with them the anti-jacobin inhabitants, who knew that their lives would be instantly sacrificed, if they should fall into the hands of the victorious 5 Republicans, and who now flocked to the beach to the number of 14,000, praying for the means of escape. The burning of ships, the explosion of magazines, the roar of artillery, and the cries of these fugitives, filled up many hours. At last the men-of-war were followed by a flotilla bearing those miserable exiles; the walls were 10 abandoned; and Dugommier took possession of the place.

22.

Practically, the reconquest of Lucknow was the final blow in the suppression of the great Bengal mutiny. Some episodes of the war, however, were still worthy of notice. For example, the rebels seized Gwalior, the capital of the Maharajah Scindia, who escaped to Agra. The English had to attack the rebels, retake Gwalior, and restore 5 Scindia. The Maharajah Scindia of Gwalior had deserved well of the English Government. Under every temptation, every threat, and and many profound perils from the rebellion, he had remained firm to his friendship. So, too, had Holkar, the Maharajah of the Indore territory. The country owes much to those two princes for the part 10 they took at her hour of need; and she has not, we are glad to think, proved herself ungrateful.

23.

It was Sunday morning, and the Royal army was posted on the height of Edge Hill. Below, in the broad valley of the Red Horse, were the parliamentary forces, having the disadvantage of charging up hill in the face of a deadly fire. King Charles, clad in a suit of 5 armour, was with his troops, endeavouring to sustain their courage by a great show of cheerfulness. Lindsay was there, an old and experienced officer, warmly attached to the royal cause, but impatient at the liberty allowed to the youthful Rupert, whose insolence and rapacity had induced many to leave the king's service. Rupert commanded the right wing of the horse, Lord Wilmot held command of 10 the left, and there was a reserve force commanded by Lord Digby and Sir John Byron.

24.

Some men are born rich, and some are born lucky, and some are born both to luck and riches. Kipling is one of the last. Nature endowed him with uncommon qualities, and circumstances sent him into the sphere in which those qualities could be most fortunately exercised. It seems strange that the great store of treasure which he opened to us should have been unknown so long. It is always so when a man of real genius dawns upon the world.

25.

The Hôtel de Ville has played a conspicuous part in the different revolutions, having been the usual rallying-place of the democratic party. On the 14th of July, 1789, the captors of the Bastille were conducted in triumph into the great hall. Three days later, Louis XVI. came in procession from Versailles to the Hôtel de Ville under the protection of Bailly and other popular deputies, thus publicly testifying his submission to the will of the National Assembly. The king was accompanied by a dense mob, to whom he showed himself at the window of the Hôtel de Ville, wearing the tri-coloured cockade, which Lafayette had just chosen as the cognisance of the new national guard. On the 27th of July, 1794, when the *Commune*, the tool employed by Robespierre against the Convention, was holding one of its meetings here, Barras with five battalions forced his entrance in the name of the Convention, and Robespierre, to escape arrest, attempted to shoot himself, but only succeeded in shattering his jaw.

26.

Henry now made peace, and restored Tillières. Not long after, in 1060, the King died, leaving his young son Philip, who had been already crowned, as his successor, under the guardianship of William's father-in-law Baldwin. Geoffrey of Anjou and William of Aquitaine also died, and the Angevin power was weakened by the division of Geoffrey's dominions between his nephews. William's position was greatly strengthened, now that France, under the new regent, had become friendly, while Anjou was no longer able to do mischief. William had now nothing to fear from his neighbours, and the way was soon opened for his great continental conquest.

27.

Russia and Turkey between them surrounded the whole of the Black Sea with their territory. The only outlet of Russia on the southern side is the Black Sea. The Black Sea is, save for one little outlet at its south-western extremity, a huge land-locked lake. That little outlet is the narrow channel called the Bosphorus. The Bosphorus is some seventeen miles in length, and in some places it is hardly more than half a mile in breadth. But it is very deep all through, so that ships of war can float close up to its very shores on either side. It passes between the city of Constantinople and its Asiatic suburb of Scutari, and then opens into the little Sea of Marmora. Out of the Sea of Marmora the way westward is through the channel of the Dardanelles, which forms the passage into the Archipelago, and thence into the Mediterranean.

28.

If you, ladies, are much handsomer than we, it is but just you should acknowledge that we have helped you by making ourselves ugly. We have devoted entirely to your use flowers, feathers, ribbons, jewellery, silk, gold and silver embroidery. Still more to increase the difference between the sexes, which is your great charm, and to give you the handsome share, we have divided with you the hues of nature. To you we have given the colours that are rich and splendid, or soft and harmonious; for ourselves we have kept those that are dark and dead. We have given you the sun and light; we have kept night and darkness.

29.

The works of Kneller are numerous: they are almost exclusively portraits; and over whatever he produced he threw an air of freedom and a hue of nature not unworthy of Vandyke. All the sovereigns of his time, all the noblemen of the court, all the ladies of rank or of beauty in England, sat to him for their portraits. When he painted the head of Louis the Fourteenth, the king asked him what mark of his esteem would be most agreeable to him; the painter answered modestly and genteelly that he should feel honoured if his majesty would bestow a quarter of an hour upon him, that he might execute a drawing of his face for himself. It was granted.

30.

The most picturesque of the modern biographies of Columbus, that by Lamartine, pictures him drawing his charts, and struck by an immense void in the centre of the Atlantic. The earth seemed to lack the counterpoise of a continent. Following the Arabian
5 geographers, he was convinced that the earth was a globe, round which it was possible to sail, and he believed that he could find a more direct way to the Indies by going straight before him to the west. He supposed this globe less vast than it is, and imagined the extent of sea to be traversed in order to reach the unknown lands beyond India
10 less great than navigators thought it. The existence of these lands seemed to him confirmed by the evidence of those pilots who had sailed furthest beyond the Azores.

31.

In literature France gave law to the world. The fame of her great writers filled Europe. The literary glory of Italy and of Spain had set; that of Germany had not yet dawned. The genius, therefore, of the eminent men who adorned Paris shone forth with a splendour
5 which was set off to full advantage by contrast. France, indeed, had at that time an empire over mankind, such as even the Roman Republic never attained. For, when Rome was politically dominant, she was in arts and letters the humble pupil of Greece. French was fast becoming the universal language, the language of fashionable
10 society, the language of diplomacy, and, at several courts, princes and nobles spoke it more accurately and politely than their mother tongue.

NOTES

ON THE

PASSAGES FOR TRANSLATION.

1. 1. **was**: § 44. The same tense should be used throughout this extract.

2. **all he could**: §§ 115, 119. **to encourage**: § 181.

3. **learning**: § 18, 1.

4. **he did**: § 115. **to construct**: *de construire*.

5. **allowing them**: §§ 31, 181; *permettre* governs the dative of the person.

6. **before he died**: say "before dying," § 181.

7. **when he had been king**: say "after having reigned"; § 181.

2. 1. **Caractacus was allowed**: say "one allowed Caractacus (dative)," § 76.

3. **if he were . . . put to death**: use *on*.

4. **if permitted to live**: *si on lui laissait la vie*.

6. **the lives of**: say "the life to."

3. 1. **by**: *de*.

2. **with his head . . .**: § 18, 6; omit "with." **leaning**: use the past participle. **turned**: § 81.

3. **fainting**: use the past participle.

5. **admirable resignation**: supply the indefinite article.

7. **to die**: § 180.

4. 2. **made**: *proclame*.

4. **put the crown upon his head**: *lui mit la couronne sur la tête*, § 18, 6.

6. **to recognise**: *de reconnaître*.

8. **to bring them**: § 181. **which was**: omit.

5. 1. it was getting late: *il se faisait tard.* though: § 175.
2. it would seem: *il paraît*; begin the sentence with this.
3. either: *ni.* posts: use the singular.
4. who were cast aside: cp. Note on 2, 3. strength to: *la force de.*
6. 2. I was to: see Lesson 59, Note.
4. sitting: *assise.*
5. to meet us: *à notre rencontre.*
6. that he had brought me: § 172.
7. I might: *je pouvais.*
7. 4. you: § 30, Note. left: § 41.
5. wants: subjunctive.
6. I have been studying: § 39.
8. to spend: *de passer.*
10. you were thinking of going: § 180.
11. there: § 133. you have: § 50.
12. a line: *un mot.*
13. yours ever: *tout à toi.*
8. 1. thrown: say "put"; omit "a."
2. new batteries: § 21, 1.
4. a lion-hearted woman: § 19.
5. her presence and enthusiasm: § 107.
6. representing: say "to represent," § 181.
9. 2. he was one day directing: in French an adverb or adverbial phrase must not be placed between the subject and the verb; cp. 3, 7.
3. they began firing: § 180. upon it: *dessus.*
5. who could write: subjunctive; see Lesson 60, Note.
6. when: *que.*
7. with: *de.*
9. were: omit.
10. 2. and prostrated himself: pluperfect; § 84.
3. a celestial voice seemed to sound in his ear: *il lui sembla entendre une voix céleste.* arise: second person singular.
4. to proclaim: *de proclamer.*
5. should be aided: § 174.
6. after listening to: § 181. entertained no doubt: say "doubted not," followed by *ne* and the subjunctive, § 173.
8. the ground: omit the article.

11. 1. a very ancient town: § 19.

2. lies: say "is situated." by: cp. 3, 1. gently sloping: *à pente douce.*

3. it was: § 101.

4. the second city; omit the article.

5. made it: say "made of it."

6. from . . . down to: *depuis . . . jusqu'à.*

12. 1. I once saw: cp. 9, 2.

4. half-way down the slope: *à mi-chemin de la côte.*

5. without being disturbed: § 181.

8. the obstinate girl: *la petite entêtée.*

9. I believe this scene: supply the conjunction "that," which must never be omitted in French.

13. 1. scarcely had . . . : § 48; translate "when" by *que.*

4. in his hand: § 18, 6.

5. right and left: *à droite et à gauche.*

7. was under the necessity: say "was forced."

8. to come to their aid: *pour leur venir en aide.*

14. 1. King James: § 18, 3.

2. 40,000 strong: say "strong of 40,000 men." before: § 175.

3. Viscount: § 18, 3.

4. was amongst the earliest to go over: *fut un des premiers à passer à l'ennemi.*

5. though: cp. 5, 1. with him: omit.

6. James's most trusted officer: say "the officer in (*en*) whom James had most (*le plus*) confidence; § 21, 3.

7. on: § 156.

8. gave orders for a retreat: *ordonna de battre en retraite.*

15. 1. in: *pour.*

5. continued so: *continua de l'être,* § 129. until: § 175.

8. has belonged: § 39; cp. 7, 6.

9. contains: *compte.*

10. opens: § 81.

16. 1. on the 16th of July: § 156. by: *par.* In speaking of an instrument *de* is generally used, *e.g.,* 3, 1.

2. who knew . . . : say "whom an intercepted despatch had informed (*renseigné*) as to (*sur*) . . ."

6. **were gathering** : § 81.
 7. **in numbers not to be resisted** : *en nombre rendant la résistance inutile*.
 8. **he** : § 138.
 9. **that they should be transported in safety** : *d'être transportés sains et saufs*.
 10. **as** : omit.

- 17.** 1. **warmly seconded** : cp. 12, 1.
 2. **proposed that they . . .** : § 171 ; use *on*.
 4. **as it seemed** : *semblait-il*. **the place of the doctor's residence** :
 say "where the doctor lived."
 5. **he** : *celui-ci*, § 99. **to be found** : omit.
 6. **half past twelve** : § 157.
 7. **the bell** : omit.

- 18.** 2. **it was telegraphed** : use *on*, § 76.
 3. **most complete** : *décisive*.
 7. **the first carbine** : *le premier coup de fusil*.
 9. **taken** : say "made."
 10. **announced** : imperfect.

- 19.** **early in** : *dès le commencement de*.
 3. **with** : *contre*.
 4. **present** : *actuel* ; after the substantive.
 5. **here** : say "there."

- 20.** 1. **may be said** : begin with *on*.
 5. **at an early period** : *dans les premières périodes*
 6. **Admiral Blake** : § 18, 3.
 7. **although embracing** : say "although he had embraced ;" § 175.
 of a sailor : omit the article. **late in life** : *à un âge assez avancé*.
 8. **feared and respected** : use the infinitive and put "the English" after it.

- 21.** 2. **that had fallen into their possession** : *dont ils s'étaient emparés*, § 188.
 3. **nor could they** : say "and they could not."
 5. **if they should fall** : imperfect. **into** : *entre*.
 7. **of escape** : *de s'échapper*.

- 22.** 1. **final** : *décisif*.
 5. **had to** : see Lesson 59, Note.

7. under: *malgré*.
 8. from: *résultant de*.
 9. so, too, had: *de même*.
 10. for the part they took at her hour of need: *à cause du parti qu'ils prirent à l'heure critique*.

23. 1. Sunday morning: *un dimanche matin*. *Dimanche matin* would mean "last Sunday morning."

3. were: use *se tenir*.
 4. in the face of: *sous*. clad in a suit of armour: *armé de pied en cap*.
 10. held command of: omit.
 11. commanded by: *sous*.

24. 2. both to luck and riches: say "lucky and rich."
 3. with: cp. 19, 2.
 5. store of: omit.
 6. should have been: § 174; use *rester*.
 7. of real genius: say "of a real genius." dawns upon the world: *surgit*.

25. 3. the captors of: say "those who had taken."
 6. thus publicly testifying: *rendant ainsi un témoignage public de*.
 8. at: *de*.
 10. had just chosen: *venait de choisir*. as the cognisance: omit the article.
 13. forced his entrance: *s'ouvrit un passage*.
 14. arrest: supply the indefinite article.
 15. to shoot himself: *de se tuer*.

26. 7. had become friendly: supply "to him."
 8. to do mischief: supply "to him."

27. 1. between them: *ensemble*. the whole of the Black Sea: *la Mer Noire tout entière*.
 2. with: *de*; see Note on 16, 1.
 5. called: *qu'on appelle*. is some seventeen miles in length: *est long de quelque dix-sept milles*.
 6. it is hardly more than half a mile in breadth: *il n'est guère large que d'un demi-mille*.
 8. its very shores: *ses rivages mêmes*.
 10. opens: *débouche*.
 11. through: *par*.

28. 1. ladies : *mesdames*. it is but just : *il n'est que juste* ; § 174 ; cp. 12, 9.

2. by : *en*, § 183.

4. embroidery : use the plural.

5. is : *fait*.

6. the handsome share : *la plus belle part*.

29. 1. works : *toiles* (f.).

2. whatever : *tout ce que*.

3. not unworthy : *presque dignes*.

4. all the ladies of rank or of beauty : say "all the beautiful noble ladies."

5. in : *de*. sat to him : *posèrent devant lui*.

6. the head : *le portrait*.

8. he should feel : use *se croire*.

9. that he might : *afin qu'il pût*, § 175.

10. face : *tête* (f.). it : say "the request."

30. 2. pictures him drawing : *nous le montre occupé à dessiner*.

3. the earth seemed to lack : *il semblait manquer à la terre*.

5. round which it was possible to sail : *dont il était possible de faire le tour*.

8. than it is : *qu'il ne l'est*. In a clause dependent on a comparative an expletive *ne* is required, and the neuter *le*, § 129, is often used.

9. to be traversed : *qu'il fallait traverser*.

31. 2. had set : use *s'éclipser*.

3. the genius therefore . . . shone forth : *aussi le génie . . . brillait-il*.

5. which was : omit. set off to full advantage : *rehaussée encore*.

6. had : *exerçait*. such as : say "to which," § 116.

VOCABULARY.

I. — FRENCH — ENGLISH.

ABBREVIATIONS USED IN VOCABULARY.

adj. . .	adjective.	int. . .	interjection.
adv. . .	adverb.	m. . .	masculine.
art. . .	article.	num. . .	numeral.
conj. . .	conjunction.	pers. . .	personal.
def. . .	definite.	pl. . .	plural.
demonst. . .	demonstrative.	prep. . .	preposition.
f. . .	feminine.	pron. . .	pronoun.
'h. . .	h aspirate.	r. . .	reflexive.
i. . .	intransitive.	s. . .	substantive.
impers. . .	impersonal.	t. . .	transitive.
indef. . .	indefinite.	v. . .	verb.

À, *prep.*, to, at, on, in.
abandonner, *v.t.*, abandon.
abasourdir, *v.t.*, dumfound.
abattre (§ 347), *v.t.*, fell.
abbesse, *s.f.*, abbess.
abeille, *s.f.*, bee.
d'abord, *adv.*, at first.
abricot, *s.m.*, apricot.
absent, *-e, adj.*, absent.
absoudre (§ 324), *v.t.*, absolve,
 acquit.
accepter, *v.t.*, accept.
accident, *s.m.*, accident.
acclamer, *v.t.*, applaud.
accompagner, *v.t.*, accompany.
accomplir, *v.t.*, accomplish.
accorder, *v.t.*, grant, allot.
s'accoutumer, *v.r.*, accustom one's
 self.
accroc, *s.m.*, rent, tear.
s'accroître (§ 315), *v.r.*, increase.
accueil, *s.m.*, reception.

accueillir (§ 292), *v.t.*, receive.
accusé, *s.m.*, *-e, s.f.*, accused,
 prisoner.
s'accuser, *v.r.*, accuse one's self.
achat, *s.m.*, purchase.
acheter (§ 264), *v.t.*, buy.
achever (§ 258), *v.t.*, finish.
acier, *s.m.*, steel.
acquérir (§ 300), *v.t.*, acquire.
act-eur, *s.m.*, *-rice, s.f.*, actor,
 actress.
action, *s.f.*, action, share.
actuellement, *adv.*, now, at this
 time.
adhérent, *s.m.*, follower.
admirable, *adj.*, admirable.
adresser, *v.t.*, address.
s'adresser, *v.r.*, apply.
adversaire, *s.m.*, adversary.
affaire, *s.f.*, affair, matter, busi-
 ness, bargain.
afficher, *v.t.*, post up.
afin que, *conj.*, in order that.

Afrique, *s.f.*, Africa.
agent, *s.m.*, agent. *Agent (de police)*, policeman.
s'agir (de), *v.r.*, be a question of.
s'agiter, *v.r.*, vex one's self.
agn-eau, *s.m.*, -elle, *s.f.*, lamb.
agréer, *v.t.*, accept.
aider, *v.t.* & *i.*, aid, help.
aigle, *s.m.f.*, eagle.
aigu, -ë, *adj.*, sharp.
aimer, *v.t.*, love, like. *Aimer mieux*, prefer.
ainsi, *adv.*, thus.
alarmer, *v.t.*, alarm.
Algérie, *s.f.*, Algeria.
aliment, *s.m.*, food.
alimentation, *s.f.*, diet.
Allemagne, *s.f.*, Germany.
allemand, -e, *adj.*, German.
aller (§ 281), *v.i.*, go.
s'en aller (§ 349), *v.r.*, go away.
allié, -e, *adj.*, allied.
allumer, *v.t.*, light.
Alpes, *s.f. pl.*, Alps.
ambassade, *s.f.*, embassy.
ambassadeur, *s.m.*, ambassador.
âme, *s.f.*, soul, mind.
amener (§ 258), *v.t.*, bring, lead.
amèrement, *adv.*, bitterly.
ami, *s.m.*, -e, *s.f.*, friend.
amical, -e, *adj.*, friendly.
amiral, *s.m.*, admiral.
s'amuser, *v.r.*, amuse one's self.
an, *s.m.*, year.
ancêtres, *s.m. pl.*, ancestors.
ancien, -ne, *adj.*, ancient, former.
anéantir, *v.t.*, annihilate.
anglais, -e, *adj.*, English.
Anglais, *s.m.*, -e, *s.f.*, Englishman, Englishwoman.
Angleterre, *s.f.*, England.
animal, *s.m.*, animal.
année, *s.f.*, year.
annoncer (§ 275), *v.t.*, announce.
antilope, *s.f.*, antelope.
apercevoir (§ 301), *v.t.*, perceive.
s'apercevoir (de), *v.r.*, perceive.
apparence, *s.f.*, appearance.
appartement, *s.m.*, apartment(s).

appel, *s.m.*, appeal.
appeler (§ 260), *v.t.* & *i.*, call.
s'appeler, *v.r.*, be called.
appliqué, -e, *adj.*, industrious.
apporter, *v.t.*, bring.
apprendre (§ 345), *v.t.*, learn, teach.
s'approcher, *v.r.*, approach.
après, *prep.*, after.
après-midi, *s.m.*, afternoon.
après que, *conj.*, after.
Arabe, *s.m.*, Arab.
arbre, *s.m.*, tree.
arbuste, *s.m.*, shrub.
archevêque, *s.m.*, archbishop.
argent, *s.m.*, silver, money.
arme, *s.f.*, arm, weapon.
arranger (§ 274), *v.t.*, arrange.
s'arranger, *v.r.*, arrange.
arrêter, *v.t.*, stop.
arrière-garde, *s.f.*, rear-guard.
arriver, *v.i.*, arrive, happen.
arrondi, -e, *adj.*, rounded.
arroser, *v.t.*, water.
art, *s.m.*, art. *Les beaux-arts*, the fine arts.
artiste, *s.m.f.*, artist.
Asie, *s.f.*, Asia.
assaillant, *s.m.*, assailing.
assaillir (§ 291), *v.t.*, assail.
asseoir (§ 311), *v.t.*, seat, establish.
s'asseoir, *v.r.*, sit, sit down.
assez, *adv.*, enough.
assidûment, *adv.*, assiduously.
assurer, *v.t.*, assure, ensure.
astronome, *s.m.*, astronomer.
atrocité, *s.f.*, atrocity.
attacher, *v.t.*, fasten, attach.
attaque, *s.f.*, attack.
atteindre (§ 330), *v.t.*, reach, attain.
attelage, *s.m.*, team.
attendre, *v.t.*, wait, expect.
au (contraction of *à le*), to the.
aucun, -e, *indef. adj.*, any, no.
s'augmenter, *v.r.*, increase.
aujourd'hui, *adv.*, to-day.
aussitôt que, *conj.*, as soon as.
Australie, *s.f.*, Australia.

auteur, s.m., author.
autre, indef. adj., other.
autre, indef. pron., another, other.
autrefois, adv., formerly.
autruche, s.f., ostrich.
autrui, indef. pron., others, other people.
s'avancer (§ 275), v.r., advance.
avant, prep. (of time), before.
avant que, conj., before.
avantage, s.m., advantage.
avec, prep., with.
avenue, s.f., avenue.
avertir, v.t., warn.
aveuglement, adv., blindly.
avis, s.m., opinion, advice.
avocat, s.m., barrister.
avoir (§ 312), v.t., have. *Y avoir,* there to be.

se Baigner, v.r., bathe.
bail, s.m., lease.
bande, s.f., band.
barbare, s.m., barbarian.
bataillon, s.m., battalion.
bateau, s.m., boat.
bâtir, v.t., build.
se battre (§ 347), v.r., fight.
bavard, s.m., chatterbox.
beau or bel, -le, adj., beautiful, fine.
beaucoup, adv., many, much.
beauté, s.f., beauty.
belge, adj., Belgian.
bélier, s.m., ram.
berceau, s.m., cradle.
besoin, s.m., need, want.
biche, s.f., hind.
bien, s.m., good.
bien, adv., well, much, very, many.
bien-aimé, -e, adj., beloved.
bienfait-eur, s.m., -rice, s.f., benefactor, benefactress.
bien que, conj., though.
bientôt, adv., soon.
bière, s.f., beer.

bijou, s.m., jewel.
billet, s.m., note, bill.
blanc, -he, adj., white.
blé, s.m., wheat.
blesser, v.t., wound.
bleu, -e, adj., blue.
blocus, s.m., blockade.
blond, -e, adj., fair.
boa, s.m., boa.
bœuf, s.m., ox.
boire (§ 320), v.t. & i., drink.
bombarder, v.t., bombard.
bon, -ne, adj., good.
bonhomme, s.m., good-natured man, old man.
bouc, s.m., he-goat.
bouche, s.f., mouth.
bouillant, -e, adj., boiling, fiery.
bouillir (§ 283), v.i., boil. *Faire bouillir, v.t.,* boil.
bout, s.m., end.
branche, s.f., branch.
brave, adj., brave, gallant, fine.
bravement, adv., bravely.
brebis, s.f., ewe, sheep.
bric-à-brac, s.m., knick-knack.
briller, v.i., shine, glitter.
briser, v.t., break.
brouter, v.i., browse.
bruit, s.m., noise, rumour.
brutal, -e, adj., brutal.
Bulgare, s.m.f., Bulgarian.
but, s.m., end, goal.
butiner, v.i., pillage.

Cacher, v.t., hide.
cadu-c, -que, adj., decrepit.
cage, s.f., cage.
cahier, s.m., copy-book.
caillou, s.m., flint, pebble.
Cain, s.m., Cain.
calice, s.m., cup.
calomnie, s.f., calumny.
campagne, s.f., country.
canal, s.m., canal.
canard, s.m., drake, duck.
cane, s.f., duck.
canif, s.m., penknife.

canne, *s.f.*, walking-stick.
cantatrice, *s.f.*, (eminent) female professional singer.
capitaine, *s.m.*, captain.
capitale, *s.f.*, capital, chief city.
cardinal, *s.m.*, cardinal.
caresser, *v.t.*, caress.
casse-cou, *s.m.*, break-neck place.
cause, *s.f.*, cause.
causer, *v.t.*, cause.
cavale, *s.f.*, mare.
ce, cet, *m.*, **cette**, *f.*, **ces**, *pl.*, *demonst. adj.*, this, these; that, those.
ce, demonst. pron., that; he, she, it; they.
ceci, *demonst. pron.*, this.
céder (§ 266), *v.i.*, give way.
ceindre (§ 330), *v.t.*, gird on.
cela, *demonst. pron.*, that.
célèbre, *adj.*, celebrated.
celui, *m.*, **celle**, *f.*, **ceux**, **celles**, *pl.*, *demonst. pron.*, he, him; she, her; they, them; that, those.
celui-ci, celle-ci, *sing.*, **ceux-ci, celles-ci**, *pl.*, *demonst. pron.*, this, these.
celui-là, celle-là, *sing.*, **ceux-là, celles-là**, *pl.*, *demonst. pron.*, that, those.
cent, *num. adj.*, hundred.
centigrade, *adj.*, centigrade.
centime, *s.m.*, the hundredth part of a franc.
centimètre, *s.m.*, centimetre.
central, *-e, adj.*, central.
centre, *s.m.*, centre.
cerf, *s.m.*, stag, hart.
certain, *-e, adj.*, certain, sure.
César, *s.m.*, Cæsar.
cesse, *s.f.*, ceasing. *Sans cesse*, incessantly.
cesser, *v.i.*, cease.
chacun, *-e, indef. pron.*, every one, each.
chaleur, *s.f.*, heat.
chameau, *s.m.*, camel.
champ, *s.m.*, field.

chanson, *s.f.*, song.
chanter, *v.t. & i.*, sing.
chanteur-r, -se, *s.f.*, singer.
chapeau, *s.m.*, hat.
chapitre, *s.m.*, chapter.
chaque, *adj.*, each, every.
charbon, *s.m.*, coal.
charité, *s.f.*, charity.
charmer, *v.t.*, charm, delight.
charretier, *s.m.*, waggoner.
chasse, *s.f.*, hunt, hunting.
chasse-mouches, *s.m.*, fly-brush.
chaudement, *adv.*, warmly.
chaux, *s.f.*, lime.
chemin, *s.m.*, way, road. *Chemin de fer*, railway. *Chemin faisant*, on the road.
ch-er, -ère, *adj.*, dear.
chercher, *v.t.*, seek, look for, endeavour.
cheval, *s.m.*, horse.
chèvre, *s.f.*, she-goat.
chevreau, *s.m.*, kid.
chevrette, *s.f.*, roe.
chez, *prep.*, at, to, in one's house, with, among.
chien, *s.m.*, dog.
chien-loup, *s.m.*, wolf-dog.
chose, *s.f.*, thing. *Quelque chose*, something.
chou, *s.m.*, cabbage.
choucroute, *s.f.*, sauer-kraut.
le Christ, *s.m.*, Christ. *Jésus Christ*, Jesus Christ.
cinq, *num. adj.*, five.
Circé, *s.f.*, Circe.
circonstance, *s.f.*, circumstance.
citronnier, *s.m.*, lemon-tree.
clarté, *s.f.*, clearness.
classe, *s.f.*, class, school-time.
cloche, *s.f.*, bell.
coche, *s.m.*, coach.
colère, *s.f.*, anger.
collection, *s.f.*, collection.
colline, *s.f.*, hill.
colombe, *s.f.*, dove.
colon, *s.m.*, colonist.
colonie, *s.f.*, colony.
combat, *s.m.*, combat, fight.

combattre (§ 347), *v.i.*, fight
combien, *adv.*, how much, how many.
comble, *s.m.*, top.
comité, *s.m.*, committee.
commander, *v.t.*, command, order.
comme, *conj.*, as, like, how.
commencer (§ 275), *v.t. & i.*, begin.
comment, *adv.*, how.
commettre (§ 346), *v.t.*, commit.
commodément, *adv.*, commodiously.
compagnie, *s.f.*, company.
se complaire (§ 317), *v.r.*, delight.
compl-et, -ète, *adj.*, complete.
complètement, *adv.*, completely.
se composer, *v.r.*, be composed.
comprendre (§ 345), *v.t.*, understand.
compromettre (§ 346), *v.t.*, compromise.
compte, *s.m.*, account, reckoning.
compter, *v.t. & i.*, reckon, expect.
comtesse, *s.f.*, countess.
concert, *s.m.*, concert.
conclure (§ 322), *v.t.*, conclude.
concourir (§ 298), *v.i.*, compete.
condition, *s.f.*, condition.
conduire (§ 332), *v.t. & i.*, conduct, lead, take.
conduite, *s.f.*, conduct.
confier, *v.t.*, confide.
confire (§ 341), *v.t.*, preserve, pickle.
conflit, *s.m.*, conflict.
confortablement, *adv.*, comfortably.
connaître (§ 313), *v.t.*, know.
conquérir (§ 300), *v.t.*, conquer.
conseil, *s.m.*, counsel, advice; council.
conseiller, *s.m.*, counsellor.
consentir (§ 288), *v.i.*, consent.
conserver, *v.t.*, preserve.
consolat-eur, *s.m.*, -rice, *s.f.*, comforter.
construire (§ 333), *v.t.*, construct.
consulter, *v.t.*, consult.
conte, *s.m.*, story.

content, -e, *adj.*, contented, satisfied.
contrée, *s.f.*, country.
contre-ordre, *s.m.*, counter-order.
convaincre (§ 228), *v.t.*, convince.
convenir (§ 229), *v.i.*, agree; be fit, be expedient.
conversation, *s.f.*, conversation.
copier, *v.t.*, copy.
corail, *s.m.*, coral.
cornichon, *s.m.*, gherkin, cucumber.
correction, *s.f.*, correction.
correspondre, *v.i.*, correspond.
corriger (§ 274), *v.t.*, correct.
côte, *s.f.*, rib; shore.
cou, *s.m.*, neck.
couche, *s.f.*, layer.
se coucher, *v.r.*, go to bed.
coudre (§ 327), *v.t.*, sew.
couleur, *s.f.*, colour.
coupable, *adj.*, guilty.
se couper, *v.r.*, cut one's self.
cour, *s.f.*, yard.
courage, *s.m.*, courage.
courant, *s.m.*, course. *Mettre au courant de*, acquaint with.
courber, *v.t.*, curve.
courrier, *s.m.*, post, courier; messenger. *Lire son courrier*, read one's letters.
cousin, *s.m.*, -e, *s.f.*, cousin.
couteau, *s.m.*, knife.
coûter, *v.i.*, cost.
couvent, *s.m.*, convent.
couvrir (§ 293), *v.t.*, cover.
craindre (§ 329), *v.t.*, fear.
crainctif, -ve, *adj.*, timid.
cravate, *s.f.*, necktie.
crayon, *s.m.*, pencil.
créat-eur, *s.m.*, -rice, *s.f.*, creator.
créer (§ 269), *v.t.*, create.
Crête, *s.f.*, Crete.
creuser, *v.t.*, dig.
cri, *s.m.*, cry.
crier, *v.t. & i.*, cry, shout.
croc-en-jambe, *s.m.*, trip.
croire (§ 321), *v.t.*, believe, think.
croître (§ 315), *v.i.*, grow.

croix, *s.f.*, cross.
cruel, -le, *adj.*, cruel.
cuire (§ 334), *v.t.*, cook.
cultivateur, *s.m.*, husbandman,
 grower.
cultiver, *v.t.*, cultivate.
culture, *s.f.*, cultivation.

Daim, *s.m.*, fallow-deer, buck.
dame, *s.f.*, lady.
damoiseau, *s.m.*, beau, young page.
damoiselle, *s.f.*, damsel.
danger, *s.m.*, danger.
dans, *prep.*, in, into.
danser, *v.i.*, dance.
danseu-r, *s.m.*, -se, *s.f.*, dancer.
de, *prep.*, of, from, by, with.
débit-eur, *s.m.*, -rice, *s.f.*, debtor.
débiteur, *s.m.*, -se, *s.f.*, news-
 monger.
Déborah, *s.f.*, Deborah.
déborder, *v.i.*, overflow.
décéder (§ 266), *v.i.*, die, de cease.
déchirant, -e, *adj.*, heart-rending.
déchirer, *v.t.*, tear. *Déchirer*
l'oreille, grate on the ear.
déclarer, *v.t.*, declare.
décorer, *v.t.*, decorate.
découvrir (§ 293), *v.t.*, discover.
se dédire (§ 342), *v.r.*, retract.
déduire (§ 332), *v.t.*, infer.
défaut, *s.m.*, defect.
défendre, *v.t.*, defend, forbid.
défricher, *v.t.*, clear.
degré, *s.m.*, degree.
déjà, *adv.*, already.
déjeuner, *v.i.*, breakfast.
demain, *adv.*, to-morrow.
demande, *s.f.*, question, request.
demander, *v.t.*, ask, ask for.
 require.
demandeu-r, *s.m.*, -se, *s.f.*, appli-
 cant.
demeure, *s.f.*, abode.
demeurer, *v.i.*, live, reside.
demi, -e, *adj.*, half. *Une demi-*
heure, half an hour. *Une heure*
et demie, an hour and a half.

se déployer (§ 272), *v.r.*, deploy,
 open out.
depuis, *prep.*, since.
déranger (§ 274), *v.t.*, disturb.
derni-er, -ère, *adj.*, last.
des (contraction of *de les*), of the,
 from the; some, any.
dès que, *conj.*, as soon as.
désagréable, *adj.*, disagreeable.
désapprendre (§ 345), *v.t.*, unlearn.
désavantage, *s.m.*, disadvantage.
descendre, *v.i.*, descend, come
 down.
descendre, *v.t.*, bring down.
désirer, *v.t.*, desire, wish.
désobéir, *v.i.*, disobey.
désoler, *v.t.*, desolate, grieve.
désordre, *s.m.*, disorder.
desservir (§ 289), *v.t.*, take away,
 clear.
dessiner, *v.t.*, draw, sketch.
destination, *s.f.*, destination.
destiner, *v.t.*, destine, intend.
détachement, *s.m.*, detachment.
deuil, *s.m.*, mourning.
deux, *num. adj.*, two.
deuxième, *adj.*, second.
devant, *prep.* (of place), before.
deviner, *v.t.*, divine, guess.
devoir, *s.m.*, duty, task.
devoir (§ 302), *v.t.*, owe; ought,
 must.
dévouement, *s.m.*, devotion.
dévouer, *v.t.*, devote.
dictionnaire, *s.m.*, dictionary.
Dieu, *s.m.*, God.
difficile, *adj.*, difficult, hard.
difficulté, *s.f.*, difficulty.
diffus, -e, *adj.*, diffuse.
dignité, *s.f.*, dignity.
diligemment, *adv.*, diligently.
dimanche, *s.m.*, Sunday. *Le*
dimanche des Rameaux, Palm
 Sunday.
dind-on, -e, *s.m.f.*, turkey.
dire (§ 342), *v.t.*, tell, say.
diriger, *v.t.*, direct, guide.
disciple, *s.m.*, disciple.
discipline, *s.f.*, discipline.

discordant, -e, *adj.*, discordant.
 disjoindre (§ 331), *v.t.*, disjoin.
Disjoint, rickety.
 disparaître (§ 314), *v.i.*, vanish, disappear.
 disperser, *v.t.*, scatter.
 disposition, *s.f.*, disposition, disposal.
 distinctement, *adv.*, distinctly.
se distinguer, *v.r.*, distinguish one's self.
 dix, *num. adj.*, ten.
 docteur, *s.m.*, doctor.
 doctrine, *s.f.*, doctrine.
 doge, *s.m.*, doge.
 donner, *v.t.*, give.
 dont, *rel. pron.*, whose, of which, of whom.
 dorénavant, *adv.*, henceforth.
 dormir (§ 284), *v.i.*, sleep.
 douleur, *s.f.*, pain, sorrow.
 douter, *v.t. & i.*, doubt.
 dou-x, -ce, *adj.*, sweet, gentle, mild.
 drap, *s.m.*, cloth.
 drapeau, *s.m.*, flag.
 droit, -e, *adj.*, straight, right.
 dromadaire, *s.m.*, dromedary.
 Druide, *s.m.*, -sse, *s.f.*, Druid, Druidess.
 du (contraction of *de le*), of the, from the; some, any.
 duc, *s.m.*, -hesse, *s.f.*, duke, duchess.

Eau, *s.f.*, water.
 écaille, *s.f.*, shell.
 échapper, *v.i.*, escape.
 s'échapper, *v.r.*, escape.
 éclater, *v.i.*, break out.
 éclipse, *s.f.*, eclipse.
 écoli-er, *s.m.*, -ère, *s.f.*, school-boy, school-girl.
 Écosse, *s.f.*, Scotland.
 écouter, *v.t.*, listen (to).
 s'écrier, *v.r.*, cry out.
 écrire (§ 336), *v.t.*, write.
 s'écrire, *v.r.*, be written.
 écumant, -e, *adj.*, foaming.
 écumer, *v.i.*, foam.

édition, *s.f.*, edition.
 effort, *s.m.*, effort.
 effrayer, *v.t.*, frighten, appal.
 effronté, -e, *adj.*, shameless.
 égout, *s.m.*, drain.
 Égypte, *s.f.*, Egypt.
 élève, *s.m.f.*, pupil, scholar.
 élire (§ 318), *v.t.*, elect.
 élite, *s.f.*, choice, pick. *D'élite*, picked.
 elle, *pers. pron.*, she, her, it; elles, *pl.*, they, them.
 éloquentement, *adv.*, eloquently.
 émail, *s.m.*, enamel.
 emboucher, *v.t.*, put to one's mouth.
 embourbé, -e, *adj.*, stuck in the mud.
 émettre (§ 346), *v.t.*, emit, issue.
 émoudre (§ 323), *v.t.*, sharpen.
 é mouvoir (§ 303), *v.t.*, move.
 empêcher, *v.t.*, prevent.
 employer (§ 272), *v.t.*, employ, use.
 en, *prep.*, in, into, within, to.
 en, *pers. pron.*, of him, of her, of it, of them; from him, from her, from it, from them; some, any.
 enchanter, *v.t.*, enchant, gratify.
 enchante-ur, -resse, *s. & adj.*, enchanter, enchantress; enchanting.
 encore, *adv.*, yet, still, again.
 encourager (§ 274), *v.t.*, encourage.
 encre, *s.f.*, ink.
 endroit, *s.m.*, place.
 enduire (§ 332), *v.t.*, coat.
 endurer, *v.t.*, endure.
 enfant, *s.m.f.*, child, infant.
 enfermer, *v.t.*, shut up.
 enfreindre (§ 330), *v.t.*, infringe.
 s'enfuir (§ 294), *v.r.*, run away.
 engagement, *s.m.*, engagement.
 engager (§ 274), *v.t.*, engage, enter into.
 enjoindre (§ 331), *v.t.*, enjoin.
 enlever (§ 258), *v.t.*, carry, carry off, carry away, take away.
 ennemi, *s.m.*, enemy.

s'enquérir (§ 300), *v.r.*, inquire.
enseigner, *v.t.*, teach.
ensemble, *adv.*, together.
ensuite, *adv.*, afterwards, then.
entendre, *v.t.*, hear.
enterrer, *v.t.*, bury.
enthousiasme, *s.m.*, enthusiasm.
entièrement, *adv.*, entirely.
entre, *prep.*, between, among.
entreprise, *s.f.*, enterprise.
entrer, *v.t.*, enter, come in.
enviable, *adj.*, enviable.
envie, *s.f.*, wish.
envoyer (§ 282), *v.t.*, send.
épais, *-se*, *adj.*, thick.
épargner, *v.t.*, spare.
épée, *s.f.*, sword.
époque, *s.f.*, period.
ériger (§ 274), *v.t.*, erect.
erreur, *s.f.*, error, mistake.
esclave, *s.m.f.*, slave.
espagnol, *-e*, *adj.*, Spanish.
Espagnol, *s.m.*, Spaniard.
espérance, *s.f.*, hope.
espoir, *s.m.*, hope.
essayer, (§ 272), *v.t.*, try.
et, *conj.*, and.
état, *s.m.*, state. *Homme d'état*, statesman. *Les États-Unis*, the United States.
été, *s.m.*, summer.
éteindre (§ 330), *v.t.*, put out, extinguish.
étouffe, *s.f.*, stuff.
étonner, *v.t.*, astonish.
s'étonner, *v.r.*, be astonished.
étrang-er, *-ère*, *adj.*, strange, foreign.
étrang-er, *s.m.*, *-ère*, *s.f.*, foreigner.
être, (§ 348), *v.i.*, be.
étude, *s.f.*, study.
étudier, *v.t.*, study.
eux, *pers. pron.*, *m.pl.*, they, them.
Évangile, *s.m.*, Gospel.
s'éveiller, *v.r.*, awake.
événement, *s.m.*, event.
évident, *-e*, *adj.*, evident.
exactement, *adv.*, exactly.
examen, *s.m.*, examination.

exaucer (§ 215), *v.t.*, hearken to.
excellent, *-e*, *adj.*, excellent.
excentrique, *adj.*, eccentric.
exclure (§ 322), *v.t.*, exclude.
s'excuser, *v.r.*, apologise.
exemple, *s.m.*, example.
exercice, *s.m.*, exercise.
exiger (§ 274), *v.t.*, require.
existence, *s.f.*, existence.
expédition, *s.f.*, expedition.
expérience, *s.f.*, experience.
explication, *s.f.*, explanation.
exploit, *s.m.*, exploit.
explorateur, *s.m.*, explorer.
explorer, *v.t.*, explore.
exposition, *s.f.*, exhibition.
expression, *s.f.*, expression.
s'exprimer, *v.r.*, express one's self.
extérieur, *-e*, *adj.*, exterior.

Fable, *s.f.*, fable.
fabuliste, *s.m.*, fabulist.
facile, *adj.*, easy.
façon, *s.f.*, fashion.
faire (§ 344), *v.t.*, make, do.
Faire faire, have . . . made.
fait, *s.m.*, fact.
falloir (§ 309), *v.impers.*, be necessary.
faon, *s.m.*, fawn.
fatigue, *s.f.*, fatigue.
faute, *s.f.*, fault. *Faute de*, for want of.
fau-x, *-sse*, *adj.*, false.
feindre (§ 330), *v.t.* & *i.*, feign, pretend.
femme, *s.f.*, woman, wife.
fer, *s.m.*, iron.
ferme, *s.f.*, farm.
fermer, *v.t.*, shut.
fermi-er, *s.m.*, *-ère*, *s.f.*, husband-man farmer, farmer's wife.
fête, *s.f.*, festival.
feu, *s.m.*, fire.
fiancer (§ 275), *v.t.*, betroth.
fidèle, *adj.*, true, faithful.
filie, *s.f.*, girl, daughter.
fils, *s.m.*, son.

fin, *s.f.*, end, conclusion.
 fin, -e, *adj.*, fine.
 finir, *v.t.* & *i.*, finish.
 fleur, *s.f.*, flower.
 fleuret, *s.m.*, foil.
 flot, *s.m.*, wave.
 flotte, *s.f.*, fleet.
 foire, *s.f.*, fair.
 fois, *s.f.*, time (repetition). *Une fois*, once.
 fond, *s.m.*, bottom. *De fond en comble*, from top to bottom.
 fonder, *v.t.*, found.
 foudre, *v.t.*, dart, pounce.
 force, *s.f.*, strength, force. *À force de*, by dint of.
 forcer (§ 275), *v.t.*, force.
 forgeron, *s.m.*, smith, blacksmith.
 forme, *s.f.*, form, shape.
 fort, -e, *adj.*, strong.
 fort, *adv.*, very, very much; hard.
 foudre, *s.f.*, lightning.
 fouet, *s.m.*, whip.
 foule, *s.f.*, crowd.
 fourmi, *s.f.*, ant.
 fournir, *v.t.*, furnish, provide.
 fra-is, -iche, *adj.*, fresh.
 franc, *s.m.*, franc (*French coin worth 9·69 pence*).
 franc, -he, *adj.*, frank.
 fran-c, -que, *adj.*, Frankish.
 français, -e, *adj.*, French.
 Français, *s.m.*, Frenchman.
 frapper, *v.t.*, strike, tap.
 frère, *s.m.*, brother.
 froid, *s.m.*, cold.
 froid, -e, *adj.*, cold.
 fromage, *s.m.*, cheese.
 fruit, *s.m.*, fruit.
 fuir (§ 294), *v.t.* & *i.*, flee, avoid.
 funeste, *adj.*, fatal.
 fusil, *s.m.*, gun, rifle.
 fuyard, *s.m.*, fugitive.

Gagner, *v.t.*, gain, earn.
 gaïement or gaïment, *adv.*, gaily.
 gant, *s.m.*, glove.
 garance, *s.f.*, madder.

garçon, *s.m.*, boy.
 garde, *s.f.*, keeping, care. *Prenez garde de*, take care not.
 garder, *v.t.*, keep.
 gardien, *s.m.*, keeper.
 gare, *s.f.*, railway station, terminus.
 garnison, *s.f.*, garrison.
 Gaule, *s.f.*, Gaul.
 Gaulois, *s.m.*, -e, *s.f.*, Gaul.
 gaz, *s.m.*, gas.
 gazelle, *s.f.*, gazelle.
 gendarme, *s.m.*, policeman.
 général, *s.m.*, general.
 généreux, -se, *adj.*, generous.
 gens, *s.m.f. pl.*, people, persons, men.
 Georges, *s.m.*, George.
 se glisser, *v.r.*, slip.
 grain, *s.m.*, grain.
 grammaire, *s.f.*, grammar.
 grand, -e, *adj.*, great, large, tall.
 grandeur, *s.f.*, grandeur.
 gravure, *s.f.*, engraving.
 grec, -que, *adj.*, Greek.
 Grâce, *s.f.*, Greece.
 grêler, *v.impers.*, hail.
 gronder, *v.t.*, scold.
 gros, -se, *adj.*, large, big.
 grossi-er, -ère, *adj.*, coarse.
 guère, *adv.*, much, hardly.
 guérir, *v.t.* & *i.*, cure, recover.
 guerre, *s.f.*, war.

Habile, *adj.*, clever.
 habileté, *s.f.*, skill.
 s'habiller, *v.r.*, dress.
 habit, *s.m.*, garment; *pl.*, clothes.
 habitant, *s.m.*, inhabitant.
 habitation, *s.f.*, habitation.
 habituer, *v.t.*, accustom.
 s'habituer, *v.r.*, get used.
 haïr, *v.t.*, hate.
 haut, -e, *adj.*, high. *En haut*, upstairs.
 hébreu, *adj. m.*, Hebrew, Jewish.
 Hébreu, *s.m.*, Hebrew.
 Henri, *s.m.*, Henry.
 Hercule, *s.m.*, Hercules.

héron, *s.m.*, heron.
heure, *s.f.*, hour. *Deux heures*, two o'clock. *De bonne heure*, early.
heureu-x, -se, *adj.*, happy, fortunate.
hier, *adv.*, yesterday.
hippopotame, *s.m.*, hippopotamus.
hirondelle, *s.f.*, swallow.
histoire, *s.f.*, history, story.
hiver, *s.m.*, winter.
Hollande, *s.f.*, Holland.
homme, *s.m.*, man.
honneur, *s.m.*, honour.
honte, *s.f.*, shame. *Avoir honte*, be ashamed.
hôtel, *s.m.*, hotel. *Hôtel de ville*, town-hall.
huit, *num. adj.*, eight.
huître, *s.f.*, oyster.
hygiène, *s.f.*, hygiene.

Ici, *adv.*, here.
idée, *s.f.*, idea, notion.
ignorance, *s.f.*, ignorance.
il, *pers. pron. m.*, he, it; *ils*, *pl.*, they.
illusion, *s.f.*, illusion.
s'imaginer, *v.r.*, imagine one's self, fancy.
immédiatement, *adv.*, immediately.
imminence, *s.f.*, imminence.
impératrice, *s.f.*, empress.
implorer, *v.t.*, implore, beg.
impolitesse, *s.f.*, incivility.
important, *-e, adj.*, important.
importer, *v.t.*, import.
imprimerie, *s.f.*, printing.
incliner, *v.t.*, incline.
s'incliner, *v.r.*, bow.
inconsidérément, *adv.*, inconsiderately.
indemnité, *s.f.*, indemnity.
indigné, *-e, adj.*, indignant.
indigo, *s.m.*, indigo.
individu, *s.m.*, individual.
indocile, *adj.*, indocile.
indompté, *-e, adj.*, untamed, wild.

induire (§ 332), *v.t.*, induce, lead.
industrieu-x, -se, *adj.*, ingenious, skilful.
infortune, *s.f.*, misfortune.
infortuné, *-e, adj.*, unfortunate.
injustice, *s.f.*, injustice.
inqui-et, -ète, *adj.*, anxious.
installer, *v.t.*, instal.
institut-eur, *s.m.*, -rice, *s.f.*, tutor, governess.
instruire (§ 333), *v.t.*, instruct, teach.
instrument, *s.m.*, instrument.
insurgé, *s.m.*, insurgent.
intelligent, *-e, adj.*, intelligent.
intention, *s.f.*, intention. *Avoir l'intention de*, intend to.
intéresser, *v.t.*, interest.
s'intéresser, *v.r.*, take an interest.
intérêt, *s.m.*, interest.
interpréter (§ 266), *v.t.*, interpret.
intervalle, *s.m.*, interval.
intervenir (§ 297), *v.i.*, intervene.
introduire (§ 332), *v.t.*, introduce, show in.
invective, *s.f.*, invective.
inventer, *v.t.*, invent.
irlandais, *-e, adj.*, Irish.
Italie, *s.f.*, Italy.

Jacques, *s.m.*, James. *Jacques bonhomme*, nickname designating the French peasants as a class.

jalou-x, -se, *adj.*, jealous.
jamais, *adv.*, ever; never.
japonais, *-e, adj.*, Japanese.
jardin, *s.m.*, garden.
je, *pers. pron.*, I.
Jean, *s.m.*, John.
jeune, *adj.*, young.
joli, *-e, adj.*, pretty.
jouer, *v.i.*, play.
jour, *s.m.*, day.
journal, *s.m.*, newspaper.
jouvence-au, *s.m.*, -lle, *s.f.*, lad, stripling, lass.
juge, *s.m.*, judge.
jugement, *s.m.*, judgment.

juger (§ 274), *v.t. & i.*, judge.
 Julie, *s.f.*, Julia.
 jusque, *prep.*, to, as far as, till.
Jusqu'à, till. *Jusqu'à ce que*,
conj., till.
 juste, *adj.*, just.

La, *def. art. f.*, the.
 la, *pers. pron.*, her, it.
 là, *adv.*, there, thither.
 laboureur, *s.m.*, husbandman.
 lâche, *adj.*, cowardly.
 laisser, *v.t.*, leave, let.
 lait, *s.m.*, milk.
 lampe, *s.f.*, lamp.
 langue, *s.f.*, tongue, language.
 laver, *v.t.*, wash.
se laver, *v.r.*, wash.
 le, *def. art. m.*, the.
 le, *pers. pron. m.*, him, it.
 leçon, *s.f.*, lesson.
 lentement, *adv.*, slowly.
 lequel, *rel. & inter. pron. m.*,
 laquelle, *f.*, lesquels, *pl. m.*,
 lesquelles, *pl. f.*, who, whom,
 that, which, which one.
 les, *def. art. pl.*, the.
 les, *pers. pron., m. & f. pl.*, them.
 lettre, *s.f.*, letter.
 leur, *pers. pron.*, to them.
 leur, *poss. adj.*, their. *Le leur*,
la leur, *les leurs*, *poss. pron.*,
 theirs.
se lever (§ 258), *v.r.*, rise, get up.
 liberté, *s.f.*, liberty.
 licou, *s.m.*, halter.
 lie, *s.f.*, dregs.
 lieue, *s.f.*, league.
 lime, *s.f.*, file.
 lire (§ 318), *v.t. & i.*, read.
 lit, *s.m.*, bed.
 livre, *s.m.*, book.
 locomotion, *s.f.*, locomotion.
 loi, *s.f.*, law.
 Londres, *s.m.*, London.
 long, -ue, *adj.*, long.
 longtemps, *adv.*, long, a long
 while.
 lorsque, *conj.*, when.

louer, *v.t.*, praise.
 Louis, *s.m.*, Lewis.
 Louise, *s.f.*, Louisa.
 loup, *s.m.*, wolf.
 lourd, -e, *adj.*, heavy.
 lui, *pers. pron.*, he, him; to him,
 to her, to it. *Lui-même*, him-
 self.
 lumière, *s.f.*, light.
 lundi, *s.m.*, Monday.

Maçon, *s.m.*, mason.
 madame, *s.f.*, madam.
 mahométan, -e, *adj.*, Mahometan.
 main, *s.f.*, hand.
 main-forte, *s.f.*, help.
 maint, -e, *adj.*, many a.
 maintenant, *adv.*, now.
 mais, *conj.*, but.
 maison, *s.f.*, house.
 maître, *s.m.*, master, teacher.
 maîtresse, *s.f.*, mistress.
 mal, *adv.*, ill, badly.
 malade, *adj.*, ill.
 malade, *s.m.f.*, patient.
 malfaiteur, *s.m.*, malefactor.
 malheur, *s.m.*, misfortune.
 manger (§ 274), *v.t. & i.*, eat.
 marcher, *v.i.*, walk, go.
 maréchal, *s.m.*, marshal.
 mari, *s.m.*, husband.
 Marie, *s.f.*, Mary.
 marine, *s.f.*, navy.
 marraine, *s.f.*, godmother.
 marteau, *s.m.*, hammer.
 matériaux, *s.m. pl.*, materials.
 matin, *s.m.*, morning.
 maudire (§ 343), *v.t.*, curse.
 mauvais, -e, *adj.*, bad.
 me, *pers. pron.*, me, to me; my-
 self, to myself.
 méchant, -e, *adj.*, wicked.
 méconnaître (§ 313), *v.t.*, mis-
 construe.
 médecin, *s.m.*, doctor.
 Méditerranée, *s.f.*, Mediterranean.
 meilleur, -e, *adj.*, better. *Le*
meilleur, the best.
 même, *adj.*, same, self.

même, *adv.*, even.
menace, *s.f.*, threat.
mener (§ 258), *v.t.*, lead.
menteur, *s.m.*, liar.
mentir (§ 285), *v.i.*, lie.
méphitique, *adj.*, mephitic.
mère, *s.f.*, mother.
mérite, *s.m.*, merit.
mériter, *v.t.*, deserve.
messieurs, *s.m. pl.*, gentlemen, Messrs.
métier, *s.m.*, trade, calling.
mètre, *s.m.*, metre (1.093633 yards).
mettre (§ 346), *v.t.*, put.
se mettre, *v.r.*, put one's self, begin.
meurtri-er, -ère, *adj.*, murderous.
midi, *s.m.*, noon, midday, twelve o'clock.
mien, -ne (with *def. art.*), *poss. pron.*, mine.
mieux, *adv.*, better. *Le mieux*, best.
mil, *num. adj.*, one thousand (in dates *A.D.*).
mille, *num. adj.*, thousand.
mille, *s.m.*, mile.
milliard, *s.m.*, one thousand millions.
million, *s.m.*, million.
ministre, *s.m.*, minister.
minuit, *s.m.*, midnight.
minute, *s.f.*, minute.
misère, *s.f.*, misery.
moderne, *adj.*, modern.
moi, *pers. pron.*, I, me, to me. *A moi!* help!
moindre, *adj.*, less. *Le moindre*, the least.
moins, *adv.*, less. *Au moins*, at least, at any rate.
à moins que . . . *ne*, unless.
mois, *s.m.*, month.
moisson, *s.f.*, harvest, crop.
mollement, *adv.*, feebly.
moment, *s.m.*, moment.
monde, *s.m.*, world. *Tout le monde*, every one.

monotone, *adj.*, monotonous.
monsieur, *s.m.*, sir, gentleman, Mr.
monstrueux, -se, *adj.*, monstrous.
montagne, *s.f.*, mountain.
Monténégrin, *s.m.*, Montenegrin.
monter, *v.i.*, mount. *Monter à cheval*, ride on horseback.
montre, *s.f.*, watch.
monument, *s.m.*, monument.
se moquer (*de*), *v.r.*, laugh at.
mort, *s.f.*, death.
mort, -e, *adj.*, dead.
mouche, *s.f.*, fly.
moudre (§ 323), *v.t.*, grind.
mourir (§ 299), *v.i.*, die.
moustache, *s.f.*, moustache.
moustique, *s.m.*, mosquito.
mouton, *s.m.*, sheep.
mouvoir (§ 303), *v.t.*, move, work. *se mouvoir*, *v.r.*, move.
moyen, *s.m.*, means.
mugir, *v.i.*, roar.
mulet, *s.m.*, mule, *s.f.*, he-mule, she-mule.
mur, *s.m.*, wall.
mûr, -e, *adj.*, ripe.
mûrir, *v.i.*, ripen.
musique, *s.f.*, music.

N **âtre** (§ 316), *v.i.*, be born.
Napoléon, *s.m.*, Napoleon.
narration, *s.f.*, narrative.
nation, *s.f.*, nation.
nature, *s.f.*, nature.
nauffrage, *s.m.*, shipwreck.
naufragé, -e, *s.m.*, person shipwrecked, castaway.
ne, *adv.*, not.
nécessaire, *adj.*, necessary.
neige, *s.f.*, snow.
neiger (§ 274), *v.impers.*, snow.
nettoyer (§ 272), *v.t.*, clean.
neveu, *s.m.*, nephew.
nez, *s.m.*, nose.
ni, conj., neither, nor.
nid, *s.m.*, nest.
nier, *v.t.*, deny.
noble, *adj.*, noble.

noir, -e, *adj.*, black.
 nombre, *s.m.*, number.
 nombreux, -se, *adj.*, numerous.
 se nommer, *v.r.*, be called.
 non, *adv.*, no, not.
 notre, *poss. adj. m.f.*, nos, *pl.*, our.
 nourrir, *v.t.*, nourish, bring up.
 nous, *pers. pron.*, we, us, to us.
 nouveau or nouvel, -le, *adj.*, new.
 nouvelle, *s.f.*, news, tidings.
 nouvellement, *adv.*, newly.
 se noyer (§ 272), *v.r.*, be drowned, drown.
 nuée, *s.f.*, cloud, swarm.
 nuire (§ 335), *v.i.*, hurt, harm.
 nuit, *s.f.*, night.
 nul, -le, *indef. adj. & pron.*, no, not any, no one.

Objet, *s.m.*, object.
 obscurément, *adv.*, obscurely.
 obscurité, *s.f.*, obscurity.
 s'occuper, *v.r.*, occupy one's self, be busy.
 odeur, *s.f.*, odour, smell, scent.
 œil, *s.m.* (*pl. yeux*), eye.
 œuvre, *s.f.*, work.
 office, *s.m.*, service.
 officier, *s.m.*, officer.
 offre, *s.f.*, offer.
 offrir (§ 293), *v.t.*, offer.
 oindre (§ 331), *v.t.*, anoint.
 oiseau, *s.m.*, bird.
 oisi-f, -ve, *adj.*, idle.
 on, *indef. pron.*, one, they, people.
 oncle, *s.m.*, uncle.
 onze, *num. adj.*, eleven.
 opiniâtrément, *adv.*, obstinately.
 or, *s.m.*, gold.
 oracle, *s.m.*, oracle.
 oranger, *s.m.*, orange-tree.
 orateur, *s.m.*, orator.
 ordonner, *v.t.*, order.
 ordre, *s.m.*, order.
 oreille, *s.f.*, ear.
 origine, *s.f.*, origin.
 orner, *v.t.*, adorn.
 oser, *v.t.*, dare.

J. F. C.

ou, *conj.*, or, either.
 où, *adv.*, where, whither; at which, in which; when.
 oublier, *v.t.*, forget.
 ouest, *s.m.*, west.
 ours, -e, *s.m.f.*, bear.
 ouvrage, *s.m.*, work.
 ouvrier, *s.m.*, workman.
 ouvrir (§ 293), *v.t.*, open.

Paiement or **payement**, *s.m.* payment.
 pain, *s.m.*, bread, loaf.
 paix, *s.f.*, peace.
 palais, *s.m.*, palace.
 palmier, *s.m.*, palm.
 papier, *s.m.*, paper.
 par, *prep.*, by.
 paraître (§ 314), *v.i.*, appear.
 parc, *s.m.*, park.
 parce que, *conj.*, because.
 parcourir (§ 298), *v.t.*, go over.
 pardessus, *s.m.*, overcoat.
 paresse, *s.f.*, idleness, laziness.
 paresseu-x, -se, *adj.*, lazy.
 parfait, -e, *adj.*, perfect.
 parfois, *adv.*, sometimes.
 parfum, *s.m.*, perfume.
 parler, *v.i.*, speak, talk.
 parler, *s.m.*, utterance.
 parmi, *prep.*, among.
 parole, *s.f.*, word.
 parrain, *s.m.*, godfather.
 parti, *s.m.*, side, resolution.
 Prendre son parti, make up one's mind.
 participe, *s.m.*, participle.
 partir (§ 286), *v.i.*, set out, start.
 partout, *adv.*, everywhere.
 pas, *adv.*, no, not.
 passage, *s.m.*, passage.
 passant, *s.m.*, passer-by.
 passé, -e, *adj.*, past, last.
 passeport, *s.m.*, passport.
 passer, *v.t.*, pass.
 se passer de, *v.r.*, do without, dispense with.
 passion, *s.f.*, passion.

pathétique, *adj.*, pathetic.
 pâtissier, *s.m.*, -ère, *s.f.*, pastry-cook.
 patrie, *s.f.*, native country.
 pauvre, *adj.*, poor.
 payer, *v.t.*, pay, pay for.
 pays, *s.m.*, country.
 pêche, *s.f.*, peach.
 pêche, *s.f.*, fishing.
 pêcher, *v.t. & i.*, fish, fish for.
 pédant, *s.m.*, pedant.
 peine, *s.f.*, pain, trouble, anxiety.
 pendant, *prep.*, during.
 pendant que, *conj.*, whilst, while.
 penser, *v.t. & i.*, think.
 pensum, *s.m.*, imposition.
 percer (§ 275), *v.t.*, pierce.
 perdre, *v.t.*, lose.
 perdrix, *s.f.*, partridge.
 père, *s.m.*, father.
 perfide, *adj.*, perfidious.
 périr, *v.i.*, perish.
 perle, *s.f.*, pearl.
 permettre (§ 346), *v.t.*, permit, allow.
 persévérer (§ 266), *v.i.*, persevere.
 personne, *s.f.*, person.
 personne, *indef. pron. m.*, anybody, nobody.
 persuader, *v.t. & i.*, persuade.
 perte, *s.f.*, loss, destruction.
 petit, -e, *adj.*, little, small.
 pétition, *s.f.*, petition.
 peu, *adv.*, little, few.
 peuple, *s.m.*, people, nation.
 peur, *s.f.*, fear. *Avoir peur*, be afraid. *De peur de*, for fear of. *De peur que . . . ne*, lest, for fear that.
 peut-être, *adv.*, perhaps.
 phare, *s.m.*, lighthouse.
 phrase, *s.f.*, phrase, sentence.
 Pierre, *s.m.*, Peter.
 pierre, *s.f.*, stone.
 pilote, *s.m.*, pilot.
 piment, *s.m.*, capsicum.
 pince-sans-rire, *s.m.*, sly, malicious person.

pire, *adj.*, worse. *Le pire*, the worst.
 pittoresque, *adj.*, picturesque.
 place, *s.f.*, place; post; square.
 plaideur, *s.m.*, litigant.
 se plaindre (§ 329), *v.r.*, complain.
 plaire (§ 317), *v.i.*, please. *S'il vous plaît*, if you please.
 plaisir, *s.m.*, pleasure.
 planter, *v.t.*, plant.
 plate-bande, *s.f.*, border.
 plâtre, *s.m.*, plaster.
 pleurer, *v.i.*, cry, weep.
 pleuvoir (§ 304), *v.impers.*, rain.
 plomb, *s.m.*, lead.
 ployer (§ 272), *v.i.*, bend.
 plume, *s.f.*, feather, pen.
 plus, *adv.*, more. *Plus . . . plus*, the more . . . the more. *Le plus*, the most.
 plusieurs, *pron. & adj. m.f. pl.*, several.
 poignant, -e, *adj.*, keen.
 point, *adv.*, no, not, not at all.
 poire, *s.f.*, pear.
 police, *s.f.*, police.
 pomme, *s.f.*, apple. *Pomme de terre*, potato.
 populaire, *adj.*, popular.
 population, *s.f.*, population.
 port, *s.m.*, port, harbour.
 porte, *s.f.*, gate, door.
 porte-monnaie, *s.m.*, purse.
 porter, *v.t.*, carry, incline.
 position, *s.f.*, position.
 posséder (§ 266), *v.t.*, possess.
 possible, *adj.*, possible.
 poudre, *s.f.*, powder, gunpowder.
 pour, *prep.*, for; in order to, to.
 pourparler, *s.m.*, parley.
 pourquoi, *conj.*, why.
 poursuivre (§ 338), *v.t.*, pursue.
 pourvu que, *conj.*, provided that.
 pousser, *v.t.*, push; utter.
 pouvoir (§ 306), *v.t. & i.*, be able, can, may.
 prairie, *s.f.*, meadow.
 préférer (§ 266), *v.t.*, prefer.
 premi-er, -ère, *adj.*, first.

prendre (§ 345), *v.t.*, take.
préparer, *v.t.*, prepare.
se préparer, *v.r.*, prepare.
prescription, *s.f.*, order.
prescrire (§ 336), *v.t.*, prescribe.
présentement, *adv.*, now.
président, *s.m.*, president.
presque, *adv.*, almost.
prêter, *v.t.*, lend.
prêteu-r, *s.m.*, -*se*, *s.f.*, lender.
prêtre, *s.m.*, -*sse*, *s.f.*, priest, priestess.
prier, *v.t. & i.*, pray, beg.
prière, *s.f.*, prayer.
prince, *s.m.*, -*sse*, *s.f.*, prince, princess.
principal, -*e*, *adj.*, principal.
printemps, *s.m.*, spring.
prisonni-er, *s.m.*, -*ère*, *s.f.*, prisoner.
prix, *s.m.*, price; prize.
prochain, -*e*, *adj.*, next.
proclamation, *s.f.*, proclamation.
professeur, *s.m.*, professor.
profond, -*e*, *adj.*, deep.
profondément, *adv.*, deeply.
projet, *s.m.*, project.
promenade, *s.f.*, walk.
promouvoir (§ 303), *v.t.*, promote.
prononciation, *s.f.*, pronunciation.
proph-ète, *s.m.*, -*étesse*, *s.f.*, prophet, prophetess.
proposer, *v.t.*, propose.
propre, *adj.*, own.
proverbe, *s.m.*, proverb.
prudence, *s.f.*, prudence.
prudent, -*t*, *adj.*, prudent, cautious.
publi-c, -*que*, *adj.*, public.
public, *s.m.*, public.
pué-ri-l, -*e*, *adj.*, childish.
puis, *adv.*, then, after that.
punir, *v.t.*, punish.
Pyrénées, *s.f. pl.*, Pyrenees.

Qualité, *s.f.*, quality.
quand, *adv.*, when.
quart, *s.m.*, quarter.
quatre, *num. adj.*, four.

quatre-vingts, *num. adj.*, eighty.
que, *rel. & inter. pron.*, whom, that, which, what.
que, *conj.*, that; than.
quel, -*le*, *inter. adj.*, what. *Quel que*, whatever.
quelconque, *adj.*, whatever.
quelque, *adj.*, some, any, a few.
quelqu'un, -*e*, *indef. pron.*, somebody, some one, anybody, any one. *Quelques-uns*, -*unes*, some, some people, any, a few.
se quereller, *v.r.*, quarrel.
question, *s.f.*, question.
queue, *s.f.*, tail.
qui, *rel. & inter. pron.*, who, whom, which, that.
quitter, *v.t.*, quit, leave.
quoi, *rel. & inter. pron.*, which, what.
quoique, *conj.*, although.

Raconter, *v.t.*, relate.
raisin, *s.m.*, grape, grapes.
raison, *s.f.*, reason.
raisonnement, *s.m.*, reasoning.
ramasser, *v.t.*, pick up.
rameau, *s.m.*, bough. *Le dimanche des Rameaux*, Palm-Sunday.
se rappeler (§ 261), *v.r.*, recollect.
rassurer, *v.t.*, reassure.
rat, *s.m.*, rat.
ravir, *v.t.*, delight.
recevoir (§ 301), *v.t.*, receive.
recherche, *s.f.*, search.
récit, *s.m.*, narration.
recommencer, *v.t.*, begin again.
récompense, *s.f.*, reward.
récompenser, *v.t.*, reward.
reconnaître (§ 313), *v.t.*, recognize.
recondre (§ 327), *v.t.*, sew again.
recourir (§ 298), *v.i.*, apply.
recueillir (§ 292), *v.t.*, receive.
se recueillir, *v.r.*, meditate.
réfléchir, *v.i.*, reflect, meditate.

réfléter (§ 266), *v.t.*, reflect, throw back.
refuser, *v.t.*, refuse.
regarder, *v.t.*, look at.
régiment, *s.m.*, regiment.
règle, *s.f.*, rule.
regret, *s.m.*, regret.
regretter, *v.t.*, regret.
réguli-er, -ère, *adj.*, regular.
reine, *s.f.*, queen.
reine-marguerite, *s.f.*, China-aster.
rejeter (§ 262), *v.t.*, reject.
relever (§ 258), *v.t.*, raise again, relieve.
relire (§ 318), *v.t.*, read again.
Remi, *s.m.*, Remigius.
remplacer (§ 275), *v.t.*, replace.
remplir, *v.t.*, fill, fulfil.
remuant, -e, *adj.*, restless.
remuer, *v.t. & i.*, move, stir.
rencontrer, *v.t.*, meet.
se rendormir (§ 284), *v.r.*, fall asleep again.
rendre, *v.t.*, render, return.
se rendre, *v.r.*, surrender.
renouveler (§ 261), *v.t.*, renew.
rentrer, *v.i.*, enter again, return.
renvoyer (§ 282), *v.t.*, send back.
répandre, *v.t.*, spread.
repas, *s.m.*, meal, repast.
répéter (§ 266), *v.t.*, repeat.
réponse, *s.f.*, answer.
reprise, *s.f.*, repetition. *À plusieurs reprises*, repeatedly.
reproche, *s.m.*, reproach.
se reprocher, *v.r.*, reproach one's self.
république, *s.f.*, republic.
réputation, *s.f.*, reputation.
requérir (§ 300), *v.t.*, request.
résister, *v.i.*, resist.
résolution, *s.f.*, resolution.
résoudre (§ 325), *v.t. & i.*, resolve; dissolve; solve.
se résoudre, *v.r.*, resolve.
ressembler, *v.i.*, resemble.
rester, *v.i.*, remain, stay.
retard, *s.m.*, delay.

se retirer, *v.r.*, retire.
retourner, *v.i.*, return, go back.
retourner, *v.t.*, turn, turn over.
se retourner, *v.r.*, turn round.
réunir, *v.t.*, unite.
se réunir, *v.r.*, meet.
réussir, *v.i.*, succeed.
revenir (§ 297), *v.i.*, come back.
revêtir (§ 295), *v.t.*, clothe, put on.
revoir (§ 310), *v.t.*, see again, review.
révoltant, -e, *adj.*, revolting.
Rhin, *s.m.*, Rhine.
riche, *adj.*, rich.
rien, *indef. pron.*, anything, nothing. *N'aboutir à rien*, to come to nothing.
rieu-r, -se, *adj.*, laughing.
rire (§ 339), *v.i.*, laugh.
se rire de, *v.r.*, laugh at.
rivage, *s.m.*, shore.
rivière, *s.f.*, river.
robe, *s.f.*, dress.
roi, *s.m.*, king.
rôle, *s.m.*, part, character.
romain, -e, *adj.*, Roman.
Romain, *s.m.*, Roman.
rompre, *v.t.*, break.
rouge, *adj.*, red.
rougir, *v.i.*, blush.
rou-x, -sse, *adj.*, reddish.
royal, -e, *adj.*, royal.
rue, *s.f.*, street.
ruine, *s.f.*, ruin.
russe, *adj.*, Russian.
Russie, *s.f.*, Russia.

Sa. See son.
sage, *adj.*, sage, wise.
saint, *s.m.*, saint.
saisir, *v.t.*, seize.
saison, *s.f.*, season.
salle, *s.f.*, hall, room.
salutation, *s.f.*, salutation. *Amicales salutations*, kind regards.
sang, *s.m.*, blood.
sans, *prep.*, without.
santé, *s.f.*, health.

satisfaction, *s.f.*, satisfaction.
sauvage, *adj.*, savage, wild.
Sauveur, *s.m.*, deliverer, Saviour.
savamment, *adv.*, learnedly.
savoir (§ 305), *v.t.*, know; be able, can.
science, *s.f.*, knowledge, science.
se, *reflex. pron.*, himself, herself, itself; themselves; one's self.
séance, *s.f.*, sitting.
sec, *sèche*, *adj.*, dry.
second, *-e*, *adj.*, second.
secours, *s.m.*, help. *Crier au secours*, cry for help.
secr-ét, *-ête*, *adj.*, secret.
secret, *s.m.*, secret.
Seigneur, *s.m.*, Lord.
seizième, *adj.*, sixteenth.
séjourner, *v.i.*, stay.
semaine, *s.f.*, week.
semblable, *adj.*, like, such.
sembler, *v.i.*, seem, appear.
semer (§ 258), *v.t.*, sow.
sentence, *s.f.*, sentence.
ser-f, *-ve*, *s.m.f.*, serf.
sérieusement, *adv.*, seriously.
serpent, *s.m.*, serpent.
serre, *s.f.*, talon.
servante, *s.f.*, servant-maid.
servir (§ 289), *v.t. & i.*, serve.
se servir (*de*), *v.r.*, use.
seulement, *adv.*, only.
si, *conj.*, if, whether.
si, *adv.*, so, so much, yes.
siècle, *s.m.*, century.
sien, *-ne* (*with def. art.*), *pers. pron.*, his, hers, its.
signer, *v.t.*, sign.
silence, *s.m.*, silence.
simple, *adj.*, simple.
sitôt que, *conj.*, as soon as.
six, *num. adj.*, six.
sobrement, *adv.*, soberly.
sœur, *s.f.*, sister.
soi, *reflex. pron.*, one's self, self.
soin, *s.m.*, care.
soir, *s.m.*, evening, night.
sol, *s.m.*, soil, ground.

soldat, *s.m.*, soldier.
sollicitation, *s.f.*, solicitation.
somme, *s.f.*, sum.
sommeil, *s.m.*, sleep.
son, *s.m.*, sound.
son, *m.*, *sa*, *f.*, *ses*, *m.f. pl.*, *poss. adj.*, his, her, its.
songer (§ 274), *v.i.*, think.
sort, *s.m.*, lot.
sortir (§ 290), *v.i.*, go out.
stot, *-te*, *s. & adj.*, fool, foolish.
sou, *s.m.*, sou, halfpenny.
souhaiter, *v.t.*, wish.
soupeçonner, *v.t.*, suspect.
souper, *v.i.*, sup.
source, *s.f.*, source.
sourd, *-e*, *adj.*, deaf.
sournois, *-e*, *adj.*, artful.
sous, *prep.*, under, beneath, in.
souscrire (§ 336), *v.t.*, sign.
se souvenir de (§ 297), *v.r.*, remember.
souvent, *adv.*, often.
spectacle, *s.m.*, spectacle.
style, *s.m.*, style.
subir, *v.t.*, undergo.
substantiel, *-le*, *adj.*, substantial.
succès, *s.m.*, success.
successivement, *adv.*, successively.
succomber, *v.i.*, succumb.
sucrer, *s.m.*, sugar.
sud, *s.m.*, south.
suédois, *-e*, *adj.*, Swedish.
suffire (§ 340), *v.i.*, suffice, be sufficient.
Suisse, *s.f.*, Switzerland.
suite, *s.f.*, consequence. *Par suite de*, in consequence of.
suivre (§ 338), *v.t.*, follow.
sujet, *s.m.*, subject, ground. *Au sujet de*, with regard to.
supérieur, *-e*, *adj.*, superior.
supposer, *v.t.*, suppose.
sur, *prep.*, upon, on, over.
surpasser, *v.t.*, surpass.
surprendre (§ 345), *v.t.*, surprise.
survenir (§ 297), *v.i.*, turn up.

Tabac, *s.m.*, tobacco.
 table, *s.f.*, table.
 tâche, *s.f.*, task.
 taille, *s.f.*, cutting.
 tailleur, *s.m.*, tailor.
 taire (§ 319), *v.t.*, say nothing of.
se taire, *v.r.*, be silent.
 talent, *s.m.*, talent.
 taquiner, *v.t.*, tease.
 tard, *adj. & adv.*, late.
 te, *pers. pron.*, thee, to thee.
 teinture, *s.f.*, dyeing.
 tel, -le, *adj.*, such, like.
 téméraire, *adj.*, rash.
 tempête, *s.f.*, tempest.
 temple, *s.m.*, temple.
 temps, *s.m.*, time; weather.
 tenir, (§ 296), *v.t. & i.*, hold.
Tenir à, desire to.
se tenir, *v.r.*, stay, remain.
 terre, *s.f.*, earth, land.
 territoire, *s.m.*, territory.
 thé, *s.m.*, tea.
 théâtre, *s.m.*, theatre.
 théorie, *s.f.*, theory.
 tigresse, *s.f.*, tigress.
 tirailleur, *s.m.*, skirmisher. *En tirailleurs*, in skirmishing order.
 tirer, *v.t. & i.*, draw, fence.
se tirer, *v.r.*, extricate one's self.
Se tirer d'affaire, get out of a fix.
 titre, *s.m.*, title.
 toi, *pers. pron.*, thee, thou.
 tomber, *v.i.*, fall.
 ton, *m.*, ta, *f.*, tes, *m.f. pl.*, poss. *adj.*, thy.
 tonner, *v.i.*, thunder.
 tort, *s.m.*, wrong. *Avoir tort*, be wrong.
 toujours, *adv.*, always.
 tour, *s.m.*, turn.
 tous, *adj. m. pl.*, toutes, *adj. f. pl.*
 tout, -e, *adj.*, all, every. *Tous les jours*, every day.
 tout, *s.m.*, whole, everything.
 tout, *adv.*, wholly, quite.
 tragédie, *s.f.*, tragedy.

se trahir, *v.r.*, betray one's self.
 traire (§ 337), *v.t.*, milk.
 traite, *s.f.*, bill.
 tranquille, *adj.*, quiet, calm.
 transporter, *v.t.*, convey, transport.
 travail, *s.m.*, work.
 travailler, *v.i.*, work.
 trembler, *v.i.*, tremble, shiver.
 trente, *num. adj.*, thirty.
 très, *adv.*, very.
 tressaillir (§ 291), *v.i.*, start, thrill.
 tribu, *s.f.*, tribe.
 trois, *num. adj.*, three.
 troisième, *num. adj.*, third.
 tromper, *v.t.*, deceive.
se tromper, *v.r.*, be mistaken.
 trompeur, -se, *adj.*, deceitful.
 trop, *adv.*, too much, too many, too.
 tropical, -e, *adj.*, tropical.
 tropique, *s.m.*, tropic.
 troupe, *s.f.*, troop.
 troupeau, *s.m.*, flock.
 trouver, *v.t.*, find.
se trouver, *v.r.*, find one's self, be.
 truie, *s.f.*, sow.
 tsar, *s.m.*, czar.
 tsarine, *s.f.*, czarina.
 tu, *pers. pron.*, thou, you.
 tuer, *v.t.*, kill.
 Turc, *s.m.*, Turk.
 turco-grec, -que, *adj.*, Turco-Greek, Greco-Turkish.

Ulysse, *s.m.*, Ulysses.
 un, -e, *num. adj.*, one.
 un, -e, *indef. adj. & pron.*, one.
 un, -e, *indef. art.*, a, an.
 usage, *s.m.*, use.
 usine, *s.f.*, factory.
 utile, *adj.*, useful.

Vaccine, *s.f.*, vaccination.
 vache, *s.f.*, cow.
 vaillant, -e, *adj.*, valiant.
 vaincre (§ 328), *v.t.*, vanquish.

vainqueur, *s.m.*, victor.
vaisseau, *s.m.*, ship.
valet, *s.m.*, footman, servant.
valoir (§ 308), *v.i.*, be worth.
Valoir mieux, be better.
vanité, *s.f.*, vanity.
vanter, *v.t.*, vaunt, extol.
vapeur, *s.f.*, steam.
véhicule, *s.m.*, vehicle.
vendre, *v.t. & i.*, sell.
vendredi, *s.m.*, Friday.
vénérer (§ 266), *v.t.*, venerate.
venir (§ 297), *v.i.*, come.
Venise, *s.f.*, Venice.
vent, *s.m.*, wind, gale.
verger, *s.m.*, orchard.
véritable, *adj.*, true, genuine.
vermeil, *-le, adj.*, rosy.
verset, *s.m.*, verse.
vêtir (§ 295), *v.t.*, clothe.
veu-f, -ve, *s.m.f.*, widower, widow.
viande, *s.f.*, meat.
vice, *s.m.*, vice.
vicomtesse, *s.f.*, viscountess.
victime, *s.f.*, victim.
victoire, *s.f.*, victory.
vieille, *s.f.*, old woman.
vieux or vieil, *-le, adj.*, old.
vigne, *s.f.*, vine.
ville, *s.f.*, town, city.
vin, *s.m.*, wine.
vingt, *num. adj.*, twenty.
violent, *-e, adj.*, violent, strong.

violette, *s.f.*, violet.
visage, *s.m.*, face.
visite, *s.f.*, visit, call.
vite, *adv.*, quickly.
vitrail, *s.m.*, stained glass window.
vivre (§ 326), *v.i.*, live.
voici, here is, here are ; this is, these are.
voilà, there is, there are, that is, those are.
voir (§ 310), *v.t.*, see.
voisin, *s.m.*, *-e, s.f.*, neighbour.
voler, *v.t.*, fly ; *v.t.*, steal.
voleur, *s.m.*, thief, robber.
volonté, *s.f.*, will.
votre, *poss. adj. m.f., vos, pl.*, your.
vouloir (§ 307), *v.t.*, will, be willing, wish.
vous, *pers. pron.*, you, to you.
Vous-même, yourself.
voyage, *s.m.*, journey.
voyager (§ 274), *v.i.*, travel.
voyageur, *s.m.*, traveller.
vrai, *-e, adj.*, true.
vraiment, *adv.*, truly, indeed.
vue, *s.f.*, sight.

Y, *adv.*, there.
y, *pers. pron.*, to him, her, it, them ; in it, them.
yeux. See *œil*.

II.—ENGLISH—FRENCH.

A ^{un.} **abandon**, abandonner.
abbey, abbaye, *f.*
able, capable. *Be able*, pouvoir (§ 306).
about, environ.
above, au-dessus de.
absent, absent.
absolve, absoudre (§ 324).
accession, avènement, *m.*
accompany, accompagner.
account, rapport, *m.*
accurately, avec correction.
accuse, accuser.
accustom, accoutumer.
achieve, accomplir.
acknowledge, reconnaître (§ 312).
acquire, acquérir (§ 300).
across, à travers.
act, acte, *m.*
act, agir.
active, actif, -ve.
actress, actrice, *f.*
actually, véritablement.
address, adresse, *f.*
address, adresser, s'adresser à, parler à.
adjacent, avoisinant.
admire, admirer.
admit, admettre (§ 346).
advance, s'avancer, avancer (§ 275).
adversary, adversaire, *m.*
advise, avis, conseil, *m.*
Æsop, Esope, *m.*
afar, loin.
affair, affaire, *f.*
affection, affection, *f.*

afraid, effrayé. *Be afraid*, avoir peur. *Be much afraid*, avoir grand peur.
Africa, Afrique, *f.*
after, *prep.*, après; *conj.*, après que.
afternoon, après-midi, *m.* and *f.*
age, âge, *m.* *Of age*, majeur.
Under age, mineur.
agility, agilité, *f.*
agitate, émouvoir (§ 303).
agree, convenir (§ 297), agréer.
agreeable, agréable.
aid, aide, assistance, *f.*
aid, secourir (298), aider.
aim, visée, *f.* *Take aim*, viser.
air, air, *m.*
Aix-la-Chapelle, *m.*
ajar, entr'ouvert.
alarm-clock, réveille-matin, *m.*
Alexander, Alexandre, *m.*
Algiers, Alger, *m.*
all, *adj.*, tout, *pl.*, tous.
all, *adv.*, tout. *At all*, du tout.
alleviate, soulager (§ 274).
allow, permettre (§ 346), accorder.
allude, faire (§ 344) allusion.
almost, presque.
Alps, Alpes, *f. pl.*
already, déjà.
also, aussi.
although, bien que, quoique.
always, toujours.
ambassador, ambassadeur, *m.*
ambiguous, ambigu, -ë.
America, Amérique, *f.*
ammunition, munitions, *f. pl.*
among, parmi.
amuse, amuser.

amusing, amusant.
 an, un.
 ancestors, ancêtres, aïeux, *m. pl.*
 ancient, ancien, -ne.
 and, et.
 anger, colère, *f.*
 Angevin, angevin.
 Anjou, Anjou, *m.*
 announce, annoncer (§ 275).
 another, un autre. *One another*,
 l'un l'autre.
 answer, réponse, *f.*
 answer, répondre.
 ant, fourmi, *f.*
 antidote, antidote, *m.*
 anti-jacobin, anti-jacobin.
 antiquity, antiquité, *f.*
 any, du, de la, de l', des; quel-
 conque; en. *Anything*, rien.
 appalling, effrayant.
 appeal, appel, *m.*
 appear, paraître (§ 314), com-
 paraître.
 applause, applaudissements, *m. pl.*
 apple, pomme, *f.*
 apply, s'adresser. *Apply one's self*,
 s'appliquer.
 appreciate, apprécier.
be apprehensive, appréhender.
 approach, approche, *f.*
 approach, *v.*, s'approcher de, *i.*,
 s'approcher.
 approval, approbation, *f.*
 apricot, abricot, *m.*
 Arab, Arabe, *m.*
 Arabian, arabe.
 archbishop, archevêque, *m.*
 archipelago, archipel, *m.*
 argue, débattre (§ 347).
 arise, se lever (§ 258).
 arm, bras, *m.*
 arms, armes, *f. pl.* *Lay down*
arms, mettre (§ 346) bas les
 armes.
 army, armée, *f.*
 around, autour de.
 arrest, arrestation, *f.*
 arrival, arrivée, *f.*
 arrive, arriver, aboutir.

arrow, flèche, *f.*
 arsenal, arsenal, *m.*
 art, art, *m.*
 article, article, *m.*
 artillery, artillerie, *f.*
 as, *conj.*, comme. *As for*, quant à.
 as, *adv.*, aussi . . . que.
 ascend, gravir.
 Asiatic, asiatique.
 aside, de côté.
 ask, ask for, demander.
 assail, assaillir (§ 291).
 assemble, assembler.
 assembly, assemblée, *f.*
 assistance, aide, *f.*
 assizes, assises, *f. pl.* *Court of*
assizes, cour (*f.*) d'assises.
 association, association, *f.*
 assure, assurer.
 astonish, étonner.
 astonishment, étonnement, *m.*
 at, à. *At my grandmother's*, chez
 ma grand'mère.
 athlete, athlète, *m.*
 Atlantic, Atlantique.
 attach, attacher, adjoindre (§ 331).
Attached, dévoué.
 attack, attaque, *f.*
 attack, attaquer.
 attain, atteindre (§ 330), par-
 venir (§ 297).
 attempt, tentative, *f.*
 attempt, tenter, essayer (§ 272).
 attention, attention, *f.*
 attentive, attentif, -ve.
 attorney general, avocat général,
 attractive, attrayant.
 Austria, Autriche, *f.*
 author, auteur, *m.*
 avenging, vengeur, -resse.
 avoid, éviter.
 await, attendre.
 awake, éveiller.
 award, décerner.
 Azores, Açores, *f. pl.*

Baby, bébé, *m.*
 bad, mauvais.

Baden, Bade, f.
 badly, mal.
baffle, échapper à.
Baldwin, Baudouin, m.
ball, balle, f. *Dance, bal, m.*
bandit, bandit, m.
bank, rive, f.
barley, orge, f.
barn, grange, f.
baron, baron, m.
base, baser.
basin, bas-fond, m.
basis, base, f.
Bastille, Bastille, f.
bataillon, bataillon, m.
bath, bain, m.
bathe, t., baigner, i., se baigner.
battery, batterie, f.
battle, bataille, f.
battle-axe, hache (f.) d'armes.
be, être (§ 348), se trouver.
beach, plage, f.
bear, porter, supporter. Be born, naître (§ 316).
beat, battre (§ 347).
beautiful, beau or bel, -lè.
beauty, beauté, f.
become, devenir (§ 297).
bed, lit, m. Go to bed, se coucher.
beer, bière, f.
before, adv., auparavant.
before, prep. (of time) avant, (of place) devant, (with infin.) avant de; conj., avant que.
beg, prier.
begin, commencer (§ 275). Begin afresh, recommencer.
beginning, commencement, m.
behave, se comporter, se conduire (§ 332).
behind, derrière. From behind, par derrière.
Belgian, belge.
Belgium, Belgique, f.
believe, croire (§ 321).
bell, cloche, f.
belong, appartenir (§ 296).
below, en bas.
benefactor, bienfaiteur, m.

Bengal, Bengale, m.
besiege, assiéger, (§ 274).
best, adj., le meilleur; adv., le mieux.
bestow, accorder.
betray, trahir.
better, adj., meilleur; adv., mieux. Be better, valoir (§ 308) mieux.
between, entre.
beyond, au-delà de.
big, gros, -se.
biography, biographie, f.
bishop, évêque, m.
bite, mordre.
black, noir.
blood, sang, m.
blow, coup, m.
blue, bleu.
blush, rougir.
boarding-house, pension (f) de famille.
boaster, hâbleur, m.
boat, bateau, m.
body, corps, m.
boil, t., bouillir (§ 283), t., faire bouillir.
bond, lien, m.
book, livre, m. Exercise book, cahier, m.
book-keeping, tenue (f) des livres.
be born, naître (§ 316).
Bosphorus, Bosphore, m.
both, l'un et l'autre, tous les deux.
boy, garçon, m.
brandy, eau-de-vie, f.
brave, vaillant.
bread, pain, m.
break, rompre. Break into, enfoncer (§ 275). Break out, éclater.
breakfast, déjeuner, m.
breath, out of, essoufflé.
breathe one's last, rendre le dernier soupir.
bride, épousée, f.
briefly, brièvement.
brilliant, éclatant.

bring, apporter, rapporter, amener, ramener (§ 258).

Britain, Grande Bretagne, *f*.

British, britannique.

broad, large.

brother, frère, *m*.

brow, front, *m*.

Brussels, Bruxelles, *f*.

build, bâtir.

building, bâtiment, édifice, *m*.

bulk, gros, *m*.

bullet, balle, *f*.

bulletin, bulletin, *m*.

bull-fight, course (*f*.) de taureaux.

burden, fardeau, *m*.

burning, incendie, *m*.

but, mais.

buy, acheter (§ 264).

by, par, de.

Cab, fiacre, *m*.

Caesar, César, *m*.

calamity, calamité, *f*.

call, appel, *m*.

call, appeler (§ 261).

calmly, tranquillement.

can, pouvoir (§ 306), savoir (§ 305).

Canada, Canada, *m*.

canal, canal, *m*.

candidate, candidat, *m*.

cannon, canon, *m*. *Cannon-ball*, boulet (*m*.) de canon.

Canterbury, Cantorbéry, *m*.

cap, bonnet, *m*.

capital, capitale, *f*.

capitulate, capituler.

captain, capitaine, *m*.

captive, captif, prisonnier, *m*.

care, se soucier.

carnation, œillet, *m*.

carnival, carnaval, *m*.

cart, charrette, *f*.

case, caisse, *f*.

cast, jeter (§ 262).

castle, château, *m*.

eat, chat, *m*.

catch, attraper.

cause, cause, *f*.

caution, prudence, *f*.

cease, cesser.

cede, céder (§ 266).

celebrate, célébrer (§ 266).

celestial, céleste.

central, central.

centre, centre, *m*.

century, siècle, *m*.

certain, certain.

change, changement, *m*.

change, *t*., changer (§ 274), *i.*, se changer.

channel, détroit, *m*.

chapel, chapelle, *f*.

chapter, chapitre, *m*.

character, caractère, *m*.

characteristic, caractéristique.

charge, attaquer.

charity, charité, *f*.

charm, charme, *m*.

charming, charmant.

chart, carte, *f*.

chase, chasse, *f*.

chase, chasser, refouler.

chatterer, bavard, *m*.

cheerfulness, gaieté, *f*.

cherry, cerise, *f*.

chief town, chef-lieu, *m*.

child, enfant, *m*.

choose, choisir. *Chosen men*, hommes d'élite.

Christopher, Christophe, *m*.

church, église, *f*.

citizen, citoyen, *m*.

circumstance, circonstance, *f*.

city, ville, cité, *f*.

claim, prétention, réclamation, *f*.

class, classe, *f*.

Claudia, Claude, *f*.

Claudius, Claude, *m*.

clearly, clairement.

clerk, commis, *m*.

clemency, clémence, *f*.

clever, instruit.

cliff, falaise, *f*.

cloak, manteau, *m*.

clock, horloge, *f*. *Seven o'clock*, sept heures.

close, étroit.
close, fermer.
close up to, tout près de.
cloud, nuage, *m.*
cluster, bouquet, *m.*
coachman, cocher, *m.*
coast, côte, *f.*
cock, coq, *m.* *Cock and bull story*,
 coq-à-l'âne, *m.*
cockade, cocarde, *f.*
coffee, café, *m.*
cognizance, marque distinctive, *f.*
cold, froid.
coldly, froidement.
collapse, s'écrouler.
colonist, colon, *m.*
colonize, coloniser.
colony, colonie, *f.*
colour, couleur, *f.*
Columbus, Colomb, *m.*
come, venir (§ 297). *Come down*,
 descendre. *Come in*, entrer,
 rentrer. *Come out*, sortir (§ 290).
comedian, comédien, *m.*
command, commander, dominer.
commerce, commerce, *m.*
commune, commune, *f.*
communicate, communiquer.
companion, compagnon, -e.
compatriot, compatriote, *m.*
competitor, concurrent, *m.*
complain, se plaindre (§ 329).
complete, compl-et, -ète.
compliment, compliment, *m.*
compose, composer.
composition, composition, *f.*
conceal, cacher.
conceive, concevoir (§ 301).
concerning, touchant.
concert, concert, *m.*
conclude, conclure (§ 322).
condemn, condamner.
condiment, condiment, *m.*
condition, situation, condition. *f.*
On condition, sous condition.
conduct, conduite, *f.*
conduct, conduire (§ 332).
confidence, confiance, *f.*
confident, sûr.

confirm, confirmer.
connect, lier.
conquer, vaincre (§ 328), con-
 quérir (§ 300).
conqueror, conquérant, vain-
 queur, *m.*
conquest, conquête, *f.*
consent, consentir (§ 288).
consider, trouver.
conspicuous, important.
conspirator, conjuré, *m.*
construct, construire (§ 333).
consult, consulter.
consume, consumer.
contain, contenir (§ 296), ren-
 fermer.
continent, continent, *m.*
continental, continental.
continue, continuer.
contradict, contredire (§ 342).
contrast, contraste, *m.*
contribute, contribuer.
convention, convention, *f.*
conversation, conversation, *f.*
convince, convaincre (§ 328).
cook, cuire (§ 334).
cool, fra-is, -iche.
coolness, sang-froid, *m.*
copy, copie, *f.*
coquettish, coquet, -te.
corn, blé, grain, *m.*
coronation, couronnement, *m.*
correct, corriger (§ 274).
cotton, coton, *m.*
counsel, conseil, *m.*
count, comte, *m.*
count, compter.
counterpoise, contrepoids, *m.*
countess, comtesse, *f.*
country, pays, *m.*, campagne,
 patrie, contrée, *f.*
courage, courage, *m.*
courageously, courageusement.
court, cour, *f.*
cousin, cousin, -e.
cover, couvrir (§ 293).
cow, vache, *f.*
create, créer.
crime, crime, *m.*

crowd, foule, *f.*
 crown, couronne, *f.*
 crown, couronner.
 crumble, s'écrouler.
 crusader, croisé, *m.*
 crush, écraser.
 cry, cri, *m.*
 culprit, coupable, *m.*
 cultivate, cultiver.
 cup, tasse, coupe, *f.*
 curse, maudire (§ 343).
 custom, coutume *f.*
 custom-house, douane, *f.* *Custom-house officer*, douanier, *m.*
 cut, couper. *Cut down*, abattre (§ 347). *Cut off*, couper.
 cutler, coutelier, *m.*

Damage, dégât, *m.*
 danger, danger, *m.*
 dare, oser.
 daring, audace, *f.*
 dark, sombre, brun.
 darkness, ténèbres, *f. pl.*
 date, dater.
 daughter, fille, *f.*
 dawn, surgir.
 day, jour, *m.*, journée, *f.* *Every day*, tous les jours.
 dead, mort.
 deadly, meurtri-er, -ère.
 dealer, marchand, *m.*
 dear, ch-er, -ère.
 death, mort, *f.*
 debt, dette, *f.*
 decanter, carafe, *f.*
 deceive, décevoir (§ 301), tromper.
 December, décembre, *m.*
 decent, convenable.
 declare, déclarer.
 decrease, décroître (§ 315).
 deep, profond.
 defeat, défaite, *f.*
 defence, défense, *f.*
 defendant, défende-ur, -resse.
 defender, défenseur, *m.*
 definition, définition, *f.*

degree, degré, *m.*
 delay, délai, *m.*
 deliver, délivrer, remettre (§ 346).
 deliverance, délivrance, *f.*
 democratic, démocratique.
 dense, dense, immense.
 departmental, de département.
 deprive, priver.
 deputy, député.
 descend, descendre.
 describe, décrire (§ 336).
 desertion, désertion, *f.*
 deserve, mériter.
 design, désigner.
 desire, désirer.
 despatch, dépêche, *f.*
 despatch, expédier, envoyer (§ 282)
 desperate, acharné.
 destroy, détruire (§ 333).
 detain, retenir (§ 296).
 devastate, dévaster.
 deviate, se départir (§ 286).
 devote, consacrer.
 diamond, diamant, *m.*
 Diana, Diane, *f.*
 dictionary, dictionnaire, *m.*
 die, mourir (§ 299).
 difference, différence, *f.*, (*quarrel* différend, *m.*
 different, différent.
 difficulty, difficulté, *f.*
 dignified, élevé.
 diligent, diligent, appliqué.
 dine, dîner.
 dinner, dîner, *m.*
by dint of, à force de.
 diplomacy, diplomatie, *f.*
 direct, direct.
 direct, diriger (§ 274).
 disadvantage, désavantage, *m.*
 disappear, disparaître (§ 314).
 disaster, désastre, *m.*
 disciple, disciple, *m.*
 discourse, discourir (§ 298).
 discover, découvrir (§ 293).
 discreet, discr-et, -ète.
 disfigure, défigurer.
 dishonour, déshonneur, *m.*
 disperse, disperser.

displease, déplaire (§ 317).
dissolved, dissous -te.
distinguish, distinguer.
distractedly, éperdument.
distress, détresse, *f.*
disturb, déranger (§ 274).
divinity, divinité.
divide, partager (§ 274).
division, partage, *m.*
do, faire, (§ 344).
doctor, docteur, médecin, *m.*
dog, chien, *m.*
doll, poupée, *f.*
dominant, prédominant.
dominion, état, *m.*
door, porte, *f.*
doubt, doute, *m.* *No doubt*, sans doute.
doubt, douter.
down, en bas.
dozen, douzaine, *f.*
dragoon, dragon, *m.*
drama, drame, *m.*
draw, dessiner. *Draw up*, dresser.
drawing, dessin, *m.*
drawing-room, salon, *m.*
dream, rêver.
dress, robe, *f.*
dress, habiller, vêtir (§ 295), (*a wound*) panser. *Dress again*, se revêtir.
drink, boisson, *f.*
drink, boire (§ 320).
drive, chasser, refouler.
drown, noyer, (§ 272).
duchess, duchesse, *f.*
due, dû, due.
duke, duc, *m.*
during, pendant.
dust, poussière, *f.*
duty, devoir, droit, *m.*
dye, teindre (§ 330).

Each, *adj.*, chaque; *pron.*, chacun, -e. *Each other*, l'un l'autre.
ear, oreille, *f.*
early, de bonne heure.

earn, gagner.
earth, terre, *f.*
easily, facilement, aisément.
Easter, Pâques, *m.*
eat, manger (§ 274).
ecclesiastical, ecclésiastique.
education, éducation, *f.*
Edward, Edouard, *m.*
effect, effet, *m.* *In effect*, en effet.
egg, œuf, *m.*
Egypt, Egypte, *f.*
eight, huit.
elapse, s'écouler.
elbow, coudoyer (§ 272).
eldest, aîné.
elector, électeur, *m.*
elegantly, élégamment.
elephant, éléphant, *m.*
elevate, élever (§ 258).
eleven, onze.
embassy, ambassade, *f.*
emblem, emblème, *m.*
embrace, embrasser.
embroidery, broderie, *f.*
eminent, éminent.
emperor, empereur, *m.*
empire, empire, *m.*
employ, employer (§ 272).
empress, impératrice, *f.*
enchant, enchanter.
encourage, encourager (§ 274).
end, fin, *f.*, bout, résultat, *m.*
end, finir.
endeavour, s'efforcer (§ 275).
endow, douer.
endure, supporter.
enemy, ennemi, *m.*
energy, énergie, *f.*
engender, engendrer.
engineer, ingénieur, *m.*
England, Angleterre, *f.*
English, anglais.
enhance, rehausser.
enjoy one's self, s'amuser bien.
enough, assez. *Be enough*, suffire (§ 340).
enquiry, question, *f.*
enslave, asservir.
enter, *i.* entrer; *t.* entrer dans.

enterprise, entreprise, *f.*
enthusiasm, enthousiasme, *m.*
enthusiast, enthousiaste, *m.*
entirely, entièrement.
entrance, entrée, *f.*
entreat, supplier.
environs, environs, *m. pl.*
envoy, envoyé, *m.*
episode, épisode, *m.*
equally, également.
equitable, équitable.
equivalent, équivalent. *Be*
equivalent, équivaloir (§ 308).
erect, dresser, ériger (§ 274).
escape, s'échapper, échapper à.
establish, établir.
esteem, estime, *f.*
esteem, estimer.
eternally, éternellement.
Europe, Europe, *f.*
European, européen, -ne.
even, même.
evening, soir, *m.*, soirée, *f.*
event, événement, *m.*
ever, jamais.
every, chaque, tout. *Everybody*,
 tout le monde. *Every day*, tous
 les jours, chaque jour. *Every-*
thing, tout.
evidence, témoignage, *m.*
evident, évident.
evil, mal, *m.*
exactly, justement.
exaggeration, exagération, *f.*
exalt, élever (§ 258)
example, exemple, *m.*
exceed, surpasser.
exclude, exclure (§ 322).
exclusively, exclusivement.
excursion, excursion, *f.*
execute, exécuter.
exercise, exercice, *m.*
exercise, exercer.
exhibition, exposition, *f.*
exile, exil, *m.*; (*person*) exilé.
exile, exiler.
exist, exister.
existence, existence, *f.*
expect, attendre.

expedition, expédition, *f.*
experience, expérience, *f.*
experience, éprouver, subir.
experienced, expérimenté.
expiate, expier.
explain, expliquer.
exploit, exploit, *m.*
exploration, exploration, *f.*
explore, explorer.
explosion, explosion, *f.*
export, exporter.
expressly, expressément.
extensive, étendu.
extent, étendue, *f.*
extraordinary, extraordinaire.
extreme, extrême.
extremity, extrémité.
eye, œil, *m.*

Fable, fable, *f.*
fail, échouer.
faint, s'évanouir.
faith, foi, *f.* *Faith!* ma foi!
fall, chute, *f.*
fall, tomber.
fame, renommée, *f.*
family, famille, *f.*
famous, illustre.
fan, éventail, *m.*
far, loin. *As far as*, jusqu' à.
farmer, fermier, cultivateur, *m.*
fashionable, élégant, haut.
fast, vite, rapidement.
fat, gras, -se.
fatal, fatal, funeste.
father, père, *m.* *Father-in-law*,
 beau-père, *m.*
fatherland, patrie, *f.*
fatigue, fatigue, *f.*
fault, faute, *f.*
favourable, favorable.
favourite, favori, -te.
fear, peur, *f.*
fear, craindre (§ 329), avoir peur.
fearful, épouvantable.
feast, régal, *m.*
feather, plume, *f.*
February, février, *m.*

feed, nourrir.
feel, sentir (§ 288).
fertile, fertile.
fetch, chercher, aller chercher.
Fetch down, descendre.
fever, fièvre, *f.*
few, peu. *A few*, un peu, quelques, quelques-uns, quelques-unes.
field, champ, *m.* *Battle-field*, champ de bataille.
fifth, cinquième. *Charles the Fifth (of Spain)*, Charles-Quint.
fight, se battre, combattre (§ 347).
fight, combat, *m.*
fill, remplir.
find, trouver. *Find out*, découvrir (§ 293).
fine, fin.
finish, finir, achever (§ 258).
fire, feu, *m.*
fire, tirer.
firm, ferme, fidèle.
first, premi-er, -ère, unième.
fish, poisson, *m.*
fisherwoman, pêcheuse, *f.*
five, cinq.
fix, établir.
flame, flamme, *f.*
flash, éclair, *m.*
flat, plat.
flee, s'enfuir, fuir (§ 294).
fleece, écorcher.
fleet, flotte, *f.*
float, flotter, naviguer.
flock, accourir (§ 298).
flotilla, flottille, *f.*
flow, couler.
flower, fleur, *f.*
foe, ennemi, *m.*
follow, suivre (§ 338).
following, d'après.
food, nourriture, *f.*, aliment, *m.*
foolish, sot, -te, fou or fol, -le.
foolishly, sottement.
for, *prep.*, pour; (*of time*) pendant, depuis.
for, *conj.*, car.
force, forcer (§ 275).

forces, troupes, *f. pl.*
foresee, prévoir (§ 310).
forest, forêt, *f.* *Black Forest*, Forêt Noire.
forget, oublier.
forgive, pardonner.
form, forme, *f.*
form, former.
former, précédent. *The former*, celui-là, ceux-là; celle-là, celles-là.
formerly, autrefois.
fortification, fortification, *f.*
fortress, forteresse, *f.*
fortunately, heureusement, avec succès.
found, fonder.
four, quatre.
fourscore, quatre-vingts.
fox, renard, *m.*
franc, franc, *m.*
France, France, *f.*
Francis, François, *m.*
frank, franc, -he.
free, libre.
freedom, liberté, *f.*
French, français; (*the language*) français, *m.*
frequent, fréquent, nombreux, -se.
friend, ami, *m.*
friendly, favorable.
friendship, amitié, *f.*
fright, frayeur, *f.*
frighten, effrayer.
frightful, épouvantable.
frock, robe, *f.*
frock-coat, redingote, *f.*
from, de. *From . . . to*, depuis . . . jusqu'à.
fruit, fruit, *m.*
fugitive, fuyard, fugitif, *m.*
full, plein, rempli.
funeral, funérailles, *f. pl.*
furious, furieux, -se.

Gain, gagner, remporter
 gallant, vaillant,

gallantly, galamment.
 gallery, galerie, *f*.
 gambling, jeu, *m*.
 game, gibier, *m*.
 garden, jardin, *m*.
 gardener, jardinier, *m*.
 garment, vêtement, *m*.
 gate, porte, barrière, *f*.
 gather, *t.*, cueillir (§ 292), rassembler; *i.*, se réunir.
 Gaul, Gaulois, *m.*, (*country*)
 Gaul, *f*.
 general, général, *m*.
 generally, généralement.
 genius, génie, *m*.
 genteelly, avec urbanité.
 gentle, dou-*x*, -*ce*.
 gentleman, monsieur, *m*.
 gently, doucement.
 Geoffrey, Geoffroi, *m*.
 geographer, géographe, *m*.
 geography, géographie, *f*.
 George, Georges, *m*.
 German, allemand.
 Germanic, germanique.
 Germany, Allemagne, *f*.
 get, obtenir (§ 296). *Get away*, se sauver. *Get late*, se faire (§ 344) tard. *Get up*, se lever (§ 258).
 girl, fille, *f*.
 give, donner. *Give back*, rendre. *Give chase*, faire (§ 344) la chasse. *Give way*, reculer.
 glad, bien aise, heureu-*x*, -*se*.
 glass, verre, *m*.
 globe, globe, *m*.
 glory, gloire, *f*.
 go, aller (§ 281). *Go away*, s'en aller. *Go by*, passer. *Go down*, descendre. *Go on*, continuer, se prolonger (§ 274). *Go out*, sortir (§ 290). *Go out again*, ressortir. *Go up*, *upstairs*, monter. *Go to bed*, aller se coucher. *Go with*, accompagner.
 goal, but, *m*.
 goat, chèvre, *f*.
 God, Dieu, *m*.

J. F. C.

goddess, déesse, *f*.
 gold, or, *m*.
 good, bon, -*ne*.
 governess, institutrice, gouvernante, *f*.
 government, gouvernement, *m*.
 governor, gouverneur, *m*.
 grammar, grammaire, *f*.
 grand-duchy, grand-duché, *m*.
 grand-father, grand-père, aïeul, *m*.
 grand-mother, grand'mère, aïeule, *f*.
 grant, accorder, octroyer (§ 272).
 grape, raisin, *m*.
 gratitude, reconnaissance, *f*.
 great, grand.
 greatly, beaucoup.
 Greece, Grèce, *f*.
 Greek, grec, -*que*.
 green, vert, *m*.
 grief, douleur, *f*.
 grind, mouder (§ 323). *Grind again*, remoudre.
 groan, gémir, geindre (§ 330).
 ground, terre, *f*.
 grow, croître (§ 315).
 guard, garde, *f*.
 guardianship, tutelle, *f*.
 guide, guider.
 guilty, coupable.

Haberdasher, mercier, *m*.
 habit, habitude, *f*.
 hair, cheveu, *m*.
 half, *s.*, moitié, *f.*, *adj.*, demi.
 Half an hour, une demi-heure.
 Half a dozen, une demi-douzaine. *Half-way*, à mi-chemin.
 hall, salle, *f*.
 hand, main, *f*. *On all hands*, de tous côtés.
 handsome, beau or bel, -*le*.
 hang, pendre.
 happen, arriver.
 happy, heureu-*x*, -*se*.
 hard, dur.
 hare, lièvre, *m*.

harm, mal, *m.*
harmonious, harmonieu-x, -se.
harvest, moisson, *f.*
haste, hâte, *f.* *Make haste*, se hâter, accourir (§ 298).
hasten, se hâter.
hat, chapeau, *m.*
have, avoir (§ 312).
hazard, hasarder.
he, il, lui; celui.
head, tête, *f.*
health, santé, *f.*
hear, entendre, apprendre (§ 345).
heat, chaleur, *f.*
heaven, ciel, *m.*
heavy, lourd.
hedge, haie, *f.*
height, haut, *m.*, hauteur, *f.*
help, secours, *m.*
help, aider, secourir (§ 298).
hen, poule, *f.*
Henry, Henri, *m.*
her, *pers. pron.*, elle, la, lui; *poss. pron.*, son, sa, ses.
here, ici. *Here is, here are*, voici.
hermit, ermite, anachorète, *m.*
heroine, héroïne, *f.*
hers, le sien, la sienne, les siens, les siennes; à elle.
hesitate, hésiter.
hiding-place, cachette, *f.*
high, haut.
hill, colline, *f.*
him, le, lui.
himself, lui-même, se, soi
his, *adj.*, son, sa, ses, *pron.*, le sien, la sienne, les siens, les siennes; à lui.
historical, historique.
history, histoire, *f.*
hold, tenir (§ 296).
hole, trou, *m.*
holy, saint.
homage, hommage, *m.*
at home, chez soi, à la maison.
honest, honnête.
honesty, honnêteté, probité, *f.*
honour, honneur, *m.*
honour, honorer.

hope, espérance, *f.*, espoir, *m.*
hope, espérer (§ 266), souhaiter.
horror, horreur, *f.*
horse, cheval, *m.*; cavalerie, *f.*
hostess, hôtesse, *f.*
hotel, hôtel, *m.*
hour, heure, *f.*
house, maison, *f.*
how, comment.
however, quelque . . . que; cependant.
hue, teinte, *f.*
huge, vaste.
humble, humble.
humming-bird, oiseau-mouche, *m.*
hundred, cent.
Hungarian, 'Hongrois.
Hungary, 'Hongrie, *f.*
hunter, chasseur, *m.*
huntress, chasseuse, chasseresse, *f.*
hurry, se hâter.
husband, mari, *m.*
hussar, hussard, *m.*

I, je, moi.
idle, oisi-f., -ve.
idler, paresseux, *m.*
idol, idole, *f.*
if, si.
ignominiously, ignominieusement.
ill, *adj.*, malade.
ill, *adv.*, mal.
illusion, illusion, *f.*
illustrious, illustre.
image, image, *f.*
imagine, s'imaginer, se figurer.
immediately, tout de suite, immédiatement, sur le champ.
immense, immense.
immortality, immortalité, *f.*
impatience, impatience, *f.*
impatient, impatient.
impertinent, impertinent.
implore, implorer.
import, importer.
important, important.
importune, importuner.

imposing, imposant.
 impossible, impossible.
 in, en, dans, à.
 incessantly, sans cesse.
 increase, augmenter.
 incur, encourir (§ 298).
 indictment, procès-verbal, *m.*
 indeed, en effet.
 India, Inde, *f.*
 Indies, Indes, *f. pl.*
 indiscreet, indiscret, -ète.
 individual, individu, *m.*
 induce, engager (§ 274), porter.
 indulgence, indulgence, *f.*
 industriously, assidûment.
 industry, industrie, *f.*
 inferior, inférieur.
 influenza, grippe, *f.*
 information, renseignement, *m.*
 inhabitant, habitant, *m.*
 injure, nuire à (§ 335).
 insist, exiger (§ 274).
 insolence, insolence, *f.*
 instant (*of the month*), courant.
 instantly, sur le champ.
 instead of, au lieu de.
 instruct, instruire (§ 333).
 insurmountable, insurmontable.
 integrity, probité, droiture, *f.*
 intelligent, intelligent.
 intention, intention, *f.*
 inter, ensevelir.
 intercept, intercepter.
 interest, intérêt, *m.*
 interest, intéresser.
 interrupt, interrompre.
 into, dans, en.
 intrench, retrancher.
 introduce, présenter.
 invade, envahir.
 invent, inventer.
 invite, inviter.
 it, il, elle; le, la; ce.
 Italy, Italie, *f.*
 its, son, sa, ses.

Jackal, chacal, *m.*
 jacket, jaquette, *f.*

James, Jacques, *m.*
 Jane, Jeanne, *f.*
 jaw, mâchoire, *f.*
 Jerusalem, Jérusalem, *m.*
 jewel, bijou, *m.*
 jewellery, bijoux, *m. pl.*, bi-
 jouterie, *f.*
 Joan of Arc, Jeanne d'Arc, *f.*
 John, Jean, *m.*
 join, joindre, rejoindre (§ 331).
 journey, voyage, *m.*
 judge, juge, *m.*
 judge, juger (§ 274).
 judgment, jugement, *m.*
 July, juillet, *m.*
 June, juin, *m.*
 junior, jeune.
 just, juste.

Keeep, garder.
 keeping, garde, *f.*
 key, clef, *f.*
 kill, tuer.
 kind, espèce, *f.*
 king, roi, *m.*
 kingdom, royaume, *m.*
 knee, genou, *m.*
 know, savoir (§ 305), connaître
 (§ 313). *Not know*, ignorer.
Know how, savoir.

Labour, travail, *m.*
 lady, dame, *f.*
 lake, lac, *m.*
 land, terre, *f.*, pays, *m.*
 land, débarquer.
 land-locked, enfermé par des
 terres.
 language, langue, *f.*, langage,
m.
 larder, garde-manger, *m.*
 large, grand, gros, -se.
 last, derni-er, -ère. *Last week*,
 la semaine dernière. *At last*,
 enfin.
 last, durer.
 late, tard.

latter, dernier. *The latter*, celui-ci, ceux-ci, *m.*, celle-ci, celles-ci, *f.*
 laugh, rire (§ 339). *To laugh at*, se moquer de, rire de.
 law, loi, *f.* *Give law*, faire (§ 344) la loi.
 lay, déposer.
 lead, plomb, *m.*
 lead, mener (§ 258), guider, conduire (§ 332).
 leaf, feuille, *f.*
 lean, appuyer (§ 282).
 learn, apprendre (§ 345).
 learning, étude, *f.*
 least, *adj.*, le moindre, le plus petit.
 leave, congé, *m.*
 leave, *i.*, partir (§ 286), *t.*, laisser, quitter.
 lecture, conférence, *f.*
 left, gauche.
 legibly, lisiblement.
 lend, prêter.
 length, longueur, *f.* *At length*, enfin.
 less, moins.
 lesson, leçon, classe, *f.*
 lest, que . . . ne.
 letter, lettre, *f.*
 level, niveau, *m.*
 levy, percevoir (§ 301).
 Lewis, Louis, *m.*
 liar, menteur, *m.*
 liberty, liberté, *f.*
 lie, mentir (§ 285) : être situé.
 life, vie, *f.*
 light, lumière, *f.*, jour, *m.*
 lighten, éclairer.
 like, *adj.*, tel, -le.
 like, *conj.*, comme.
 like, aimer.
 line, ligne, *f.*
 lion, lion, *m.* *Lion-hearted*, au cœur de lion.
 listen (to), écouter.
 literary, littéraire.
 literature, littérature, *f.*, lettres, *f. pl.*
 litre, litre, *m.*

little, *adj.*, petit.
 little, *adv.*, peu. *A little*, un peu.
 live, vivre (§ 326), demeurer.
 living, vie, *f.*
 locomotive, locomotive, *f.*
 lodge, loger (§ 274), rester logé.
 loft, grenier, *m.*
 London, Londres, *m.*
 long, *adj.*, long, -ue.
 long, *adv.*, longtemps. *How long?* combien de temps? *Not long*, peu de temps.
 look (at), regarder. *Look for*, chercher. *Look towards*, regarder.
 loose, lancer (§ 275).
 loosen, relâcher.
 Lord, Seigneur, *m.*
 lord, lord, seigneur, *m.* *My lord*, monseigneur.
 lose, perdre.
 loud, haut.
 Louvre, Louvre, *m.*
 love, aimer.
 lower, rabattre (§ 347).
 loyalty, loyauté, *f.*
 lucky, heureux, -se.

Madam, madame, *f.*
 magazine, poudrière, *f.*
 magistrate, magistrat, *m.*
 magnificent, magnifique.
 maharajah, maharajah, *m.*
 maid, femme de chambre, *f.*
 main army, gros (*m.*) de l'armée.
 majesty, majesté, *f.*
 make, faire (§ 344).
 Malagasy, Malgache, *m.*
 malignant, mali-n, -gne.
 man, homme, valet, *m.* *Man-of-war*, vaisseau (*m.*) de guerre.
 mankind, genre humain, *m.*
 manner, manière, façon, *f.*
 mantle, manteau, *m.*
 many, beaucoup, bien, plusieurs. *Many a*, maint. *How many?* combien? *A great many*, un grand nombre.

mark, marque, *f.*
mark, marquer.
market, marché, *m.*
Marmora, Marmara.
marvel, merveille, *f.*
marvellously, à merveille.
Mary, Marie, *f.*
mask, masquer.
mass, messe, *f.* *High mass*, grand'-messe, *f.*
master, maître, *m.*
master-piece, chef-d'œuvre, *m.*
matter, circonstance, matière, *f.*
What is the matter with you!
 qu'avez-vous!
may, pouvoir (§ 306).
me, me, moi.
mead, hydromel, *m.*
meadow, prairie, *f.*
means, moyen, moyens, *m.*
meanwhile, cependant.
medical man, médecin, *m.*
Mediterranean, Méditerranée, *f.*
meet, rencontrer.
meeting, réunion, séance, *f.*
melon, melon, *m.*
memorial, exemple éclatant, *m.*
memory, mémoire, *f.*
merchandise, marchandise, *f.*
merchant, négociant, *m.*
messenger, messenger, *m.*
metre, mètre, *m.*
middle ages, moyen âge, *m.*
midnight, minuit, *m.*
mild, béni-n, -gne.
mile, mille, *m.*
milk, traire (§ 337).
mill, meunier, *m.*
mine, le mien, la mienne, les miens, les miennes; à moi.
Minerva, Minerve, *f.*
minute, minute, *f.*
mischief (to do), nuire (§ 335), governs *dativ.*
miserable, malheureux, -se.
misfortune, infortune, *f.*
mistake, erreur, faute, *f.* *Be mistaken*, se tromper.
mistress, maîtresse, *f.*

misunderstanding, mésintelligence, *f.*
mix, se mêler.
mob, foule, *f.*
modern, moderne.
modest, modeste.
modestly, avec modestie.
moment, moment, *m.*
monarch, monarque, *m.*
monastery, monastère, *m.*
Monday, lundi, *m.*
money, argent, *m.*
monotonous, monotone.
month, mois, *m.*
monument, monument, *m.*
Moorish, marocain.
more, plus, davantage.
morning, matin, *m.*
morrow, lendemain, *m.* *To-morrow*, demain.
mortal, mortel, -le, humain.
Moslem, musulman.
most, le plus.
mother, mère, *f.* *Mother tongue*, langue maternelle, *f.*
mount, mont, *m.* *Mount Calvary*, le Mont Calvaire.
mountainous, montagneux, -se.
move, mouvoir (§ 303), toucher.
much, beaucoup, bien.
multiply, multiplier.
must, falloir (§ 309), devoir (§ 302).
mustard, moutarde, *f.*
mutiny, révolte, *f.*
my, mon, ma, mes.

Naked, nu.
name, -om, *m.*
Napoleon, Napoléon, *m.*
narrow, étroit.
national, national.
nature, nature, *f.*
naval, maritime.
navigator, navigateur, *m.*
near, *adj.*, contigu, -é.
near, *prep.*, près de.
nearly, près de.

necessary, nécessaire. *To be necessary*, falloir (§ 309).

neck, cou, *m.*

Neckar, Neckar, *m.*

need, besoin, *m.* *If need be*, au besoin.

need, avoir besoin de, falloir (§ 309).

needle, aiguille, *f.*

negress, négresse, *f.*

neighbour, voisin, *m.*

neither, ni l'un ni l'autre.

nephew, neveu, *m.*

nest, nid, *m.*

never, ne . . . jamais.

new, neu-f, -ve, nouveau *or* nouvel, -le. *New year*, nouvel an, *m.*

news, nouvelle, *f.*, nouvelles, *f. pl.*

newspaper, journal, *m.*

next, prochain. *Next day*, lendemain, *m.*

Niagara, Niagara, *rv.*

nice, gentil, -le.

niece, nièce, *f.*

Niger, Niger, *m.*

night, nuit, *f.*

Nile, Nil, *m.*

nine, neuf.

ninth, neuvième.

no, *adj.*, nul, -le, aucun (usually with *ne*).

no, *adv.*, non, pas. *No longer*, ne . . . plus.

noble, noble, superbe.

nobleman, gentilhomme, noble, *m.*

nobody, ne . . . personne.

noise, bruit, *m.*

none, *adj. & pron.*, nul, -le, aucun (usually with *ne*).

noon, midi, *m.*

Norman, normand.

Normandy, Normandie, *f.*

north, nord, *m.*

not, ne . . . pas, ne . . . point, non, pas.

nothing, ne . . . rien.

notice, mention, *f.*

now, maintenant, à présent.

nowhere, nulle part.

number, nombre, *m.*

numerous, nombreux, -x, -se.

nuptials, noces, *f. pl.*

nurse, nourrice, *f.*

nut, noisette, *f.*

Obey, obéir (governs dative).

oblige, obliger (§ 274). *I*

was obliged, il m'a fallu.

obstinacy, opiniâtreté, *f.*

obstinate, opiniâtre, récalcitrant, obstiné, entêté.

obstinately, opiniâtrément.

obtain, obtenir, (§ 296).

occasion, occasion, *f.*

occupy, occuper.

October, octobre, *m.*

o'clock, heures, *e.g.* trois heures.

of, de.

offend, offenser.

offender, contrevenant, *m.*

officer, officier, *m.*

often, souvent.

old, vieux *or* vieil, -le, *Old man*, vieillard, *m.*

on, sur.

once, une fois. *At once*, tout de suite. *All at once*, tout à coup.

one, *adj.*, un.

one, *pron.*, on, l'on.

only, *adj.*, seul.

only, *adv.* seulement, ne . . . que.

open, *t.*, ouvrir (§ 293), montrer, i., déboucher.

opinion, opinion, *f.*

opium, opium, *m.*

opportunity, occasion, *f.*

or, ou.

orange, orange, *f.*

order, ordre, *m.* *In order to*, pour.

In order that, afin que, pour que.

order, ordonner, commander.

orphan, orphelin, *m.*

other, autre. *Others*, les autres, autrui.

ought, devoir (§ 302), falloir (§ 309). *You ought*, vous devriez.

our, notre, nos.

ourselves, nous-mêmes, nous.

outlet, débouché, *m.*, ouverture, *f.*

outstrip, devancer (§ 274).

outweigh, l'emporter sur.

over, sur.

overcoat, pardessus, *m.*

owe, devoir (§ 302). *Owing to*, à la suite de.

owl, 'hibou, *m.*

own, propre.

oyster, huître, *f.*

Page, page, *f.*

pain, douleur, *f.*

paint, peindre (§ 330).

painter, peintre, *m.*

painting, peinture, *f.*

palace, palais, *m.*

Palatine, palatin.

Palatinate, palatinat, *m.*

Panama, Panama, *m.*

paper, papier, journal, *m.*

pardon, pardonner.

parents, parents, *m. pl.*

Paris, Paris, *m.*

parliament, parlement, *m.*

parliamentary, du parlement.

part, partie, *f.*, rôle, *m.*

participle, participe, *m.*

particularly, particulièrement.

party, parti, *m.*

pass, passer. *Pass away*, passer.

passage, passage, *m.*

past, passé. *Half-past one*, une heure et demie.

pastry-cook, pâtissier, *m.*

path, voie, *f.*, sentier, *m.*

patience, patience, *f.*

patient (to be), avoir patience.

patriarch, patriarche, *m.*

pay, payer, rendre.

peace, paix, *f.*

peach, pêche, *f.*

pear, poire, *f.*

pearl, perle, *f.*

peasant, paysan, -ne.

pen, plume, *f.*

people, peuple, *m.*, gens, *m., f., pl.*

pepper, poivre, *m.*

perceive, apercevoir, (§ 301),

s'apercevoir de, voir (§ 310).

perform, achever (§ 258).

perhaps, peut-être.

peril, péril, *m.*

period, époque, *f.*

perseverance, persévérance, *f.*

persevere, persévérer (§ 266).

Persia, Perse, *f.*

person, personne, *f.* *In person*, en personne.

Peter, Pierre, *m.*

pheasant, faisan, *m.*

Philip, Philippe, *m.*

philosopher, philosophe, *m.*

photograph, photographie, *f.*

pick, cueillir (§ 292).

picture, tableau, *m.*

picturesque, pittoresque.

piece, morceau, *m.*

pierce, percer (§ 275).

pilgrim, pèlerin, *m.*

pilot, pilote, *m.*

pistol, pistolet, *m.*

pitch, point, *m.*

piteously, piteusement.

Pius, Pie, *m.*

place, place, *f.*, endroit, lieu, *m.*

plain, plaine, *f.*

plainly, franchement, carrément.

plaintiff, demande-ur, -resse.

plan, plan, *m.*

plant, plante, *f.*

play, jouer, se récréer.

plead, alléguer (§ 266).

please, plaire (§ 317).

pleasure, plaisir, *m.*

plunder, butin, *m.*

poetry, poésie, *f.*

pointed, pointu.

poison, poison, *m.*

Pole, Polonais, *m.*

policeman, agent de police, sergent de ville, gendarme, *m.*

polite, poli.
 politely, poliment, avec élégance.
 politically, politiquement.
 ponderous, pesant.
 poor, pauvre.
 pope, pape, *m.*
 popular, populaire.
 population, population, *f.*
 port, port, *m.*
 portrait, portrait, *m.*
 position, position, *f.*
 possess, posséder (§ 266).
 possession, possession, *f.* *In*
possession of, au pouvoir de.
 possible, possible.
 post, poste, emploi, *m.*
 post, poster.
 pound, livre, *f.*
 pour down, se précipiter.
 power, puissance, *f.*
 practically, en fait.
 pray, prier. *Pray for*, implorer.
 prefer, préférer (§ 266), aimer
 mieux.
 prepare, préparer.
 presence, présence, *f.*
 present, présent, cadeau, *m.*
 present, *adj.*, présent.
 preserve, confire (§ 341).
 pretty, joli.
 priming, amorce, *f.*
 prince, prince, *m.* *Prince of*
Wales, Prince de Galles.
 princess, princesse, *f.*
 principle, principe, *m.*
 prisoner, prisonnier, accusé, *m.*
 prize, prix, *m.*
 problem, problème, *m.*
 procession, cortège, *m.* *In pro-*
cession, en cortège.
 proclaim, proclamer.
 produce, produire (§ 332).
 profess, professer.
 profession, profession, *f.*
of, *of*, *p of ss*, *m.*
 profit, profiter.
 profound, profond.
 profusely, profusément.
 progress, progrès, *m.*

project, projet, *m.*
 project, projeter (§ 262).
 promise, promesse, *f.*
 promise, promettre (§ 346).
 prompt, prompt.
 promptitude, promptitude, *f.*
 pronunciation, prononciation, *f.*
 property, propriété, *f.*
 proposal, proposition, *f.*
 propose, proposer.
 prostrate, prosterner.
 protection, protection, *f.*
 protest, protestation, *f.*
 Protestant, protestant.
 prove one's self, se montrer.
 proverb, proverbe, *m.*
 province, province, *f.*
 prudence, prudence, *f.*
 prudently, prudemment.
 Prussian, prussien, -ne
 public, publi-c, -que
 publish, publier.
 punish, punir.
 pupil, élève, *m.f.*, disciple, *m.*
 pure, pur.
 pursue, poursuivre (§ 338).
 put, mettre (§ 346). *Put on*, re-
 vêtir.
 pyramid, pyramide, *f.*

Quality, qualité, *f.*

quarter, quart, quartier, *m.*,
 partie, *f.* *Quarter of an hour*,
 quart d'heure. *Head-quarters*,
 quartier-général.
 queen, reine, *f.*
 question, question, *f.* *To be a*
question of, s'agir de.
 quickly, vite.
 quince, coing, *m.*

Race, peuple, *m.*, race, *f.*

rain, -l-voir (§ 304).
 rallying-place, point (*m.*) de ral-
 liement.
 rampart, rempart, *m.*
 rank, rang, *m.*

rapacity, rapacité, *f.*
rapidly, rapidement.
rascal, fripon, *m.*
rather, plutôt. *I would rather*, j'aime(rais) mieux.
ray, rayon, *m.*
razor, rasoir, *m.*
reach, atteindre (§ 330), parvenir à (§ 297).
read, lire (§ 318). *Read again*, relire.
ready, prêt.
real, vrai.
reaper, moissonneur, *m.*
rear-admiral, contre-amiral, *m.*
reasonable, raisonnable.
rebel, insurgé, *m.*
rebellion, révolte, *f.*
rebuke, réprimande, *f.*
receive, recevoir (§ 301).
reception, réception, *f.*
recognize, reconnaître (§ 313).
recommend, recommander.
reconquest, reprise, *f.*
re-construct, reconstruire (§ 333).
recover, reprendre (§ 345), relever (§ 258).
re-cover, recouvrir (§ 293).
red, rouge.
redbreast, rouge-gorge, *m.*
reduce, réduire (§ 332).
refuse, refuser.
regent, régent, *m.*
regiment, régiment, *m.*
regret, regretter.
reign, régner (§ 266).
re-join, rejoindre (§ 331).
relate, raconter.
religion, religion, *f.*
remain, rester, demeurer.
remember, se souvenir (§ 297) de, se rappeler (§ 261).
remind, rappeler (dative of the person, accusative of the thing).
render, rendre.
renew, renouveler (§ 261).
repair, réparation, *f.*
repair, *t.*, réparer; *i.*, se rendre.
reparation, réparation, *f.*

repent, se repentir (§ 287).
repentant, repentant.
reply, répondre.
represent, représenter.
reprimand, réprimande, *f.*
reproach, reproche, *m.*
republic, république, *f.*
republican, républicain.
repulse, repousser.
request, requête, *f.*
require, exiger (§ 274), avoir besoin de.
reserve force, corps (*m.*) de réserve.
reside, résider.
residence, résidence, *f.*, séjour, *m.*
resistance, résistance, *f.*
resolve, résoudre (§ 325).
respect, respecter.
rest, repos, *m.*
restore, restaurer, rétablir, rendre.
retake, reprendre (§ 345).
retire, se retirer.
retrace one's steps, rebrousser chemin.
return, retour, *m.*
return, (*give back*) rendre; (*come back*) revenir (§ 297); (*go back*) retourner.
revenge, revanche, *f.*
revenge, venger (§ 274).
revive, renaître (§ 316).
revolution, révolution, *f.*
reward, récompenser.
Rhine, Rhin, *m.*
rhinoceros, rhinocéros, *m.*
ribbon, ruban, *m.*
rich, riche; gras, *-se.*
right, droit. *Be right*, avoir raison.
rightly, avec raison.
ring, sonner.
ripe, mûr.
ripen, mûrir.
rise, se lever, se relever (§ 258), monter.
rival, rival, *m.*
road, route, *f.*, chemin, *m.*, voie, *f.*
roar, grondement, *m.*

roar, gronder.
 robber, voleur, *m.*
 robust, robuste.
 Rochelle, la Rochelle, *f.*
 Roman, romain.
 Rome, Rome, *f.*
 roof, voûte, *f.*
 room, chambre, *f.*
 root, racine, *f.*
 rose, rose, *f.*
 Rosamond, Rosamonde, *f.*
 round, *adj.*, rond.
 round, *prep.*, autour de. *All*
round, tout autour.
 rout, dérouté, *f.*
 royal, royal.
 royalty, royauté, *f.*
 ruin, ruiner.
 rule, règle, *f.*
 run, courir (§ 298).
 Russia, Russie, *f.*

Sack, sac, *m.*
 sacrifice, sacrifier.
 sad, triste.
 sadden, attrister.
 sail, naviguer, voyager (§ 274).
 sailor, marin, *m.*
 saint, saint, *m.*
 salary, salaire, *m.*
 salutary, salulaire.
 same, même.
 sand, sable, *m.*
 Saracen, Sarrasin, *m.*
 satisfied, content.
 savage, sauvage, *m.*
 save, sauf, excepté, à l'exception
 de.
 say, dire (§ 342), réciter.
 scarcely, à peine.
 scene, scène, *f.*
 school, école, *f.*, collège, *m.*
 score, vingtaine, *f.*
 Scotland, Écosse, *f.*
 sea, mer, *f.*
 seat, siège, *m.*
 seat, asseoir (§ 311).
 second, second, deuxième.

second, second.
 sedately, posément.
 see, voir (§ 310). *See again*,
 revoir.
 seem, sembler, paraître (§ 313).
 Seine, Seine, *f.*
 seize, saisir, s'emparer de. *Seize*
 upon, s'emparer de.
 sell, vendre.
 send, envoyer (§ 282). *Send back*,
 renvoyer. *Send for*, envoyer
 chercher. *Send off*, expédier.
 sense, sens, *m.*
 sepulchre, sépulcre, *m.*
 sergeant, sergent, *m.*
 serious, sérieux, -se.
 servant, serviteur, *m.*, servante
 f., domestique, *m. f.*, bonne, *f.*
 serve, servir (§ 289).
 service, service, *m.*
 set, mettre (§ 346). *Set one's self*
 about, se mettre à. *Set the*
 example, donner l'exemple.
 settle, asseoir (§ 311).
 seven, sept.
 seventeenth, dix-septième.
 several, plusieurs.
 severe, sévère.
 Seville, Séville, *f.*
 sew, coudre (§ 327). *Sew up*
 again, recoudre.
 sex, sexe, *m.*
 share, part, *f.*
 sharp, aigu, -é.
 sharpen, émoudre (§ 323)
 Sharpen again, rémoudre.
 shatter, fracasser.
 she, elle.
 sheep, brebis, *f.*, mouton, *m.*
 shepherd, berger, *m.*
 ship, navire, vaisseau, *m.*
 shock, choc, *m.*
 shop, magasin, *m.*
 show, parade, *f.*
 show, montrer. *Show out*, écon-
 duire (§ 332).
 shower, averse, *f.* *A heavy*
 shower, une forte averse.
 shut, fermer.

shutter, volet, *m.*
 side, côté, *m.* *On either side*, des deux côtés.
 sight, vue, *f.*, spectacle, *m.*
 silence, silence, *m.*
 silent, silencieux, -se. *Be silent*, se taire (§ 319).
 silk, soie, *f.*
 silver, argent, *m.*
 simply, simplement.
 since, *prep.*, depuis, *conj.*, depuis que.
 sincere, sincère.
 sincerely, sincèrement.
 sinner, pécheur, -resse.
 sir, monsieur.
 sister, sœur, *f.*
 sit, s'asseoir (§ 311). *Sit down* s'asseoir.
 site, site, *m.*
 situation, situation, *f.*
 six, six.
 sixty, soixante.
 sky, ciel, *m.*
 slate, ardoise, *f.*
 slay, tuer.
 sleep, dormir (§ 284).
 slope, côte, *f.*
 slowly, lentement.
 smile, sourire, *m.*
 smile, sourire (§ 339).
 smiling, riant.
 smoke, fumer.
 so, si, ainsi. *So many, so much*, tant. *So that*, de sorte que.
 society, société, *f.*
 soft, mou or mol, -le, tendre.
 soldier, soldat, *m.*
 solve, résoudre (§ 325).
 some, *adj.*, du, de la, de l', des quelque.
 some, *pron.*, en, quelques-uns, -unes.
 somebody, quelqu'un, -e.
 something, quelque chose, *m.*
 sometimes, quelquefois.
 son, fils, *m.*
 soon, bientôt. *As soon as*, aussitôt que, dès que.

sorry, fâché.
 soul, âme, *f.*
 south, southern, sud.
 south-west, sud-ouest.
 sovereign, souverain, *m.*
 sovereignty, souveraineté, *f.*
 Spain, Espagne, *f.*
 Spaniard, Espagnol, *m.*
 Spanish, espagnol.
 spare, épargner.
 Sparta, Sparte, *f.*
 Spartan, spartiate.
 speak, parler.
 speech, discours, *m.*
 spend, passer.
 sphere, sphère, *f.*
 splendid, splendide.
 splendour, splendeur, *f.*, éclat, *m.*
 spread, *t.*, répandre, *i.*, se répandre.
 square, carré.
 stair, degré, *m.* *Stairs*, escalier, *m.* *Upstairs*, en haut.
 standing, debout.
 start, partir (§ 286), tressaillir (§ 291). *Start again*, repartir.
 state, état, *m.*
 state, annoncer (§ 275).
 stay, rester, demeurer.
 steadily, toujours.
 steal, voler.
 steep, rapide.
 step, pas, *m.*
 Stephen, Etienne, *m.*
 stick, canne, *f.*
 still, encore.
 stimulate, stimuler.
 stock, approvisionner.
 stop, *i.*, s'arrêter.
 storm, orage, *m.*
 story, histoire, *f.*
 stout, corpulent.
 straight, droit.
 strange, étrange.
 stray, s'égarer.
 strength, force, *f.*
 strengthen, raffermir, fortifier.
 strike, frapper.
 strong, fort.

student, étudiant, *m.*
study, étude, *f.*
study, étudier.
stuff, étoffe, *f.*
subject, sujet, *m.*
sub-lieutenant, sous-lieutenant, *m.*
submission, soumission, *f.*
submit, se soumettre (§ 346).
suburb, faubourg, *m.*
succeed, réussir.
success, succès, *m.*
successor, successeur, *m.*
such, tel, -le.
suffer, souffrir (§ 293).
suffice, suffire (§ 340).
sufficient, suffisant.
sugar, sucre, *m.*
suggestion, proposition, *f.*
sultan, sultan, *m.*
summer, été, *m.*
sun, soleil, *m.*
support, soutenir (§ 296), nourrir.
suppose, supposer.
suppression, répression, *f.*
surely, sûrement.
surgeon, chirurgien, *m.*
surprise, étonner.
surround, entourer.
survive, *t.*, survivre à (§ 326).
suspect, soupçonner.
sustain, soutenir (§ 296).
swallow, hirondelle, *f.*
swear, jurer.
sweat, sueur, *f.*
sweep, balayer, chasser (§ 272).
Switzerland, Suisse, *f.*
sword, épée, *f.*
syrup, sirop, *m.*

Take, prendre (§ 345), mener (§ 258). *Take prisoner*, faire (§ 344) prisonnier. *Take with one*, emmener (§ 258).

taking, prise, *f.*
talk, causer.
tall, grand.
task, tâche, *f.*

Tasmania, Tasmanie, *f.*
tax, impôt, *m.*
tea, thé, *m.*
teach, enseigner, instruire (§ 333).
tea-pot, théière, *f.*
tear, déchirer.
tease, taquiner.
telegraph, télégraphier.
tell, dire (§ 342).
temple, temple, *m.*
temptation, tentation, *f.*
ten, dix.
terrific, terrible.
territory, territoire, *m.*
terror, terreur, *f.*
than, que, *de*.
thank, remercier.
that, *demonst. adj.*, ce, ce . . . là, cet, cet . . . là, *m.*, cette, cette . . . là, *f.*
that, *demonst. pron.*, celui, celui-là, *m.*, celle, celle-là, *f.*, ce, cela.
that, *rel. pron.*, qui; lequel, laquelle, lesquels, lesquelles; *que*.
that, *conj.*, que.
the, le, la, les.
theatre, théâtre, *m.*
thee, te, toi.
their, leur, leurs.
theirs, le leur, la leur, les leurs; à eux, à elles.
them, les, eux, elles.
themselves, eux-mêmes, elles-mêmes; *se*.
then, alors, puis.
thence, de là, *en*.
there, là, y. *There is, there are*, voilà.
thermometer, thermomètre, *m.*
these, *adj.*, ces, ces . . . ci, *m. f.*, *pron.*, ceux, ceux-ci, *m.*, celles, celles-ci, *f.*
they, ils, *m. pl.*, elles, *f. pl.*; ceux, *m. pl.*, celles, *f. pl.*; eux, *m. pl.*, elles, *f. pl.*
thine, le tien, la tienne, les tiens, les tiennes; à toi.
thing, chose, *f.*

think, penser, songer (§ 274),
trouver, croire (§ 321).
third, troisième.
thirty, trente.
this, *demonst. adj.*, ce, ce . . . ci,
cet, cet . . . ci, *m.*, cette, cette
. . . ci, *f.*
this, *demonst. pron.*, celui, celui-
ci, *m.*, celle, celle-ci, *f.*, ce,
ceci.
thither, y.
those, *adj.*, ces, ces . . . là, *m.f.* ;
pron., ceux, *m.*, celles, *f.*, ceux-
là, *m.*, celles-là, *f.*
thou, tu, toi.
though, bien que, quoique.
thousand, mille, mil (*in dates*
A.D.).
threat, menace, *f.*
threaten, menacer (§ 275).
three, trois.
thresh, battre (§ 347).
through, à travers, par. *All*
through, partout, dans toute sa
longueur.
throw, jeter (§ 262).
thunder, tonner.
Thursday, jeudi, *m.*
thus, ainsi.
tigress, tigresse, *f.*
till, jusqu'à.
time, temps, *m.*, époque, *f.*, (*re-*
petition) fois, *f.*, (*of day*) heure,
f. *In time*, à temps. *For a*
long time, longtemps.
timid, timide.
to, à, en (*with countries*), pour
(*in order to*).
toad, crapaud, *m.*
tobacco, tabac, *m.*
to-day, aujourd'hui.
together, ensemble.
tongue, langue, *f.*
too, trop. *Too much*, *too many*,
trop.
tool, instrument, *m.*
tooth, dent, *f.*
top, sommet, *m.*
torrent, torrent, *m.*

totter, chanceler (§ 261).
towards, vers.
tower, tour, *f.*
town, ville, *f.*
trace, tracer (§ 275).
train, train, *m.*
transfer, transférer (§ 266).
translate, traduire (§ 332).
translation, traduction, *f.*
transmit, transmettre (§ 346).
travel, voyager (§ 274).
traveller, voyageur, -se.
treacherously, traîtreusement.
treasure, trésor, *m.*
treat, traiter.
tree, arbre, *m.*
tribulation, détresse, *f.*
tri-coloured, tricolore.
triumph, triomphe, *m.*
troop, troupe, *f.*
tropical, tropical.
Troy, Troie, *f.*
try, essayer (§ 272), goûter.
tulip, tulipe, *f.*
tunnel, tunnel, *m.*
Turkey, Turquie, *f.*
Turkish, tur-c, -que.
turn, tourner. *Turn round*, re
tourner.
twelve, douze. *Twelve o'clock*,
midi, minuit.
twenty, vingt.
twice, deux fois.
twin, jumeau, -lle.
two, deux.
Ugly, laid.
umbrella, parapluie, *m.*
uncle, oncle, *m.*
uncommon, peu ordinaire.
uncover, découvrir (§ 293).
under, sous.
understand, comprendre (§ 345).
undertake, entreprendre (§ 345),
se charger de (§ 274).
undress, déshabiller, dévêtir
(§ 295).
unfaithful, infidèle.

unfortunate, infortuné, mal-
heureux, -se.
ungrateful, ingrat.
unhappy, malheureux, -se.
uniform, uniforme, *m*.
universal, universel, -le.
unite, réunir.
unknown, inconnu.
unless, à moins que . . . ne.
unsew, découdre (§ 327).
until, jusqu'à ce que.
unwillingly, à contre-cœur.
up, en haut.
up-hill, en montant.
uphold, soutenir (§ 296).
upon, sur. *Upon it*, dessus.
use, utilité, *f*., usage, *m*.
use, se servir de (§ 289), em-
ployer (§ 272).
useful, utile.
useless, inutile.
usual, usuel, -le.

Vain, vain. *In vain*, en vain.
valley, vallée, *f*.

value, valeur, *f*.
Vandyke, Van Dyck, *m*.
vanquish, vaincre (§ 328).
various, divers.
vase, vase, *m*.
vast, vaste.
venture, s'aventurer, oser.
verbose, verbeux, -se.
very, *adj.*, même.
very, *adv.*, fort, bien, très.
vicious, méchant.
victim, victime, *f*.
victorious, victorieux, -se.
victory, victoire, *f*.
vie, rivaliser.
view, vue, *f*.
vigilance, vigilance, *f*.
vile, vil.
village, village, *m*.
vinegar, vinaigre, *m*.
virtue, vertu, *f*.
viscount, vicomte, *m*.
visit, visiter.

voice, voix, *f*.
void, vide, *m*.

Wait, attendre. *Wait for*,
attendre.

Wales, pays de Galles, *m*.
walk, promenade, *f*.
walk, marcher.
wall, muraille, *f*., mur, *m*.
walnut, noix, *f*.
want, avoir besoin de, vouloir
(§ 307).
war, guerre, *f*.
warm, chaud.
warmly, chaleureusement.
warn, avertir, prévenir (§ 297).
water, eau, *f*.
water, arroser.
water-fowl, oiseau d'eau, *m*.
water-lily, nénuphar, *m*.
way, voie, route, *f*.
we, nous.
weak, faible. *Grow weak*, faiblir.
weaken, affaiblir.
wear, porter.
wearisome, ennuyeux, -se.
weather, temps, *m*.
week, semaine, *f*.
well, puits, *m*.
well, bien. *It is well*, il est bon.
well-informed, instruit.
west, ouest, *m*.
westward, à l'ouest.
what, *rel. pron.*, ce qui, ce que,
inter. pron., qu'est-ce qui,
qu'est-ce que, que, quoi.
what, *adj.*, quel, -le.
whatever, quel . . . que.
wheat, blé, *m*.
when, quand, lorsque.
where, où.
whether, soit que, que.
which, *rel. pron.*, qui; lequel,
laquelle, lesquels; que. *That*
which, ce qui, ce que.
which, *inter. adj.*, quel, -le.
whip, fouet, *m*.
white, blanc, -ho.

who, *rel. & inter. pron.*, qui.
whoever, quiconque, qui que, quel . . . que.
whole, entier, -ère, tout.
whom, que, qui; lequel, laquelle, lesquels, lesquelles.
whose, *rel. pron.*, dont, *rel. & inter. pron.*, de qui, duquel, de laquelle, desquels, desquelles.
wicked, méchant.
wife, femme, *f.*
will, volonté, *f.*
will, vouloir (§ 307).
William, Guillaume, *m.*
win, gagner.
window, fenêtre, *f.*
wine, vin, *m.*
wing, aile, *f.*
winter, hiver, *m.*
wisdom, sagesse, *f.*
wise, sage.
wish, souhaiter, désirer, vouloir (§ 307).
with, avec.
without, sans.
witness, témoigner, voir (§ 310).
wolf, lou-p, -ve.
woman, femme, *f.*
wood, bois, *m.*
word, mot, *m.*, parole, *f.*
work, travail, ouvrage, *m.*, œuvre, *f.*

work, travailler.
workman, ouvrier, *m.*
world, monde, *m.*
worse, plus mauvais, pire.
worst, le plus mauvais, le pire.
be worth, valoir (§ 308).
worthy, digne.
wound, blessure, *f.*
wound, blesser.
write, écrire (§ 336).
writer, écrivain, *m.*
writing, écriture, *f.*
wrong, tort, *m.* *Be wrong*, avoir tort.

Year, an, *m.*, année, *f.*
 yes, oui, si.
yesterday, hier.
yet, encore, cependant.
you, vous; tu, te, toi.
young, jeune.
your, votre, vos; ton, ta, tes.
yours, le vôtre, la vôtre, les vôtres; à vous; le tien, la tienne, les tiens, les tiennes; à toi.
yourself, vous, vous-même; toi-même, te, toi.
youth (youthfulness), jeunesse, *f.*
youthful, jeune.

